

The Shining Star Above The Heaven

Chapter 1001 - 1001: Realizing the Situation

[1,608 words]

A small portion of mist condensed into the woman's head, which still showed a crazed expression. Even with her head severed, she still did not know what had just happened. As for the rest of the red mist surrounding Aldrian, it slowly condensed into a headless body.

'What just happened? Why can I not move my body?' the woman thought.

She did not instantly die because of her special vampire body, which had already transcended into the immortal realm. She could see her vision turn upside down, along with Aldrian and the dragon's calm expressions.

'Did he get me?' she thought as she saw how unbothered they were.

The vampire king narrowed his eyes. As for the others, they were truly shocked. They were from the higher heavens and possessed far sharper senses and comprehension, yet they still did not understand what had just happened.

They had only seen the dragon move his hand in a sweeping motion before the mist condensed into her head, which already severed.

They knew how strong that crazy woman was, so they had expected to witness an intense fight. That red mist technique would normally give any opponent great difficulty in catching or harming her, as her body could truly turn into mist.

The red mist itself was not ordinary mist, but one that could hide within different layers of space.

As long as her body was turned into mist, they could neither hurt nor catch her, since she could hide behind different spaces. And as long as there was even a small remnant of the mist, it could condense back into her complete body without any loss.

With the mist, she could also attack her opponents from anywhere. She could condense her physical body entirely, or form only parts of her limbs, to launch attacks.

A technique that made her difficult to attack, yet easy for her to attack others. This was one of her techniques that became a horror to many of her opponents. There was almost no one who could escape it.

But the reality was that she did not last for more than five seconds before her head was severed from her body the moment she turned into red mist.

The vampire king still narrowed his eyes as he thought about what had just happened. In that split second, when the dragon made a sweeping motion, he sensed the space surrounding the dragon turn into a kind of sharp blade for a brief moment.

This effect even reached into the dimension where physical attacks could harm that woman.

That space also hardened for a split second before returning to normal.

Such mastery of space laws was truly extraordinary.

In that short moment, the vampire king reached a conclusion. Ao Tianhai was most likely like them. He was from the higher heavens.

However, Ao Tianhai was not done yet. He then created two small black balls from his palm and threw them toward the headless body and the severed head. The balls instantly generated a powerful suction force that pulled in both the body and the head.

'No!' the woman screamed within her mind before she completely disappeared from the world.

After absorbing the body and the head, the black balls vanished.

Those who witnessed this narrowed their eyes. Their expressions turned solemn. The vampire king showed the same expression, as he seemed to recognize what those were.

'Is that absorption laws? No. Although it carries a similar feeling, I can sense a far more terrifying force hidden behind those small balls. It feels darker and colder,' he thought.

'Then is that devouring laws?' His expression turned grim. If that was the case, then this dragon was truly dangerous.

Cultivators who comprehended devouring laws were extremely rare, with only a few appearing across many generations. They were slightly different from absorption laws, which did not always result in pure destruction, as absorption laws had limitations in capacity and in the number of objects they could absorb.

Devouring laws, on the other hand, were laws of pure destruction. They sucked in everything without exception, and the only thing left behind was nothingness. It was as though they fed a bottomless abyss that would never be filled.

The laws that feared by many, but fortunately, very few were able to comprehend them.

Even the vampire king had never encountered one before. He only knew of such laws from the records of the higher heavens.

In the past, he had met two individuals who could use absorption laws, which allowed him to clearly sense the difference in Ao Tianhai's technique.

Another thing that troubled him was that he had never heard or read of a dragon who had comprehended devouring laws.

What kind of dragon was he facing right now?

While the others who witnessed the scene were still uncertain about what they had just seen, Aldrian simply nodded to himself.

'The devouring laws, the laws that could devour everything without exception,' he thought. If Ao Tianhai used his full power as a god, then he could devour even time and space themselves.

He could devour even the past if he were brave enough to face the divine punishment from the heavens.

In the distance, the vampire king, having finally reached the conclusion that this was a dangerous encounter, decided to make a move first.

"The rest of the troops, continue to attack the central star cluster. I will face them," he ordered.

His eyes suddenly turned red, and countless balls of blood appeared in space.

The other commanders obeyed his order and returned to their vessels, while the remaining vessels began to move again.

But Aldrian's voice resounded.

"You will not leave this space."

He activated his avatar technique. A giant golden avatar appeared from his body, instantly covering Ao Tianhai and Xarz.

The vampire king and the others widened their eyes at the appearance of the giant avatar, utterly astonished.

The size of the avatar was already far greater than the avatars usually created by peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators. The golden avatar made even giant interstellar vessels look like toys.

Was this truly an avatar formed by someone at the pseudo immortal establishment stage?

The vampire king was not shocked for long, as he decided to unleash his own technique. The countless balls of blood changed shape into tiny needles that could not be seen with the naked eye. He sent those needles toward Aldrian, and almost instantly, they struck the avatar's body.

The moment the countless blood needles touched the avatar's body, the blood vanished. However, Aldrian could feel his soul tingling. Something was trying to enter his soul, making him uncomfortable.

He instantly knew that this was a powerful curse that would embed itself into his being, with the blood acting as the medium to deliver it. Even though it did not touch his physical body directly, touching his avatar was enough.

This showed that the technique could still take effect as long as it touched anything connected to the victim.

It was a deadly curse, one that could touch his soul for a moment before being obliterated by his golden energy.

With countless cursed blood needles raining down on his avatar's body, Aldrian could feel the sensation in his soul continuously, and his avatar's body was also affected. The areas where the needles pierced began to deteriorate in durability.

Aldrian was truly amazed by how the vampire king's technique could affect his avatar and touching his soul.

'As expected from cultivators of the higher heavens,' he thought. If the vampire king fought with his full power at the immortal saint stage, Aldrian did not doubt that he would die.

Fortunately, in the First Heaven, cultivators like the vampire king were limited to the peak pseudo-immortal stage.

Aldrian ignored the curse and instead clasped his hands together. His avatar mirrored the exact movement, and his eyes became sharply focused.

The vampire king was truly surprised when he saw that his technique had no effect, but he did not remain surprised for long. Suddenly, from beneath his feet, a pool of blood appeared. The blood rose and changed shape into two knight figures.

Blood Knights.

The two Blood Knights instantly dashed toward Aldrian, each grasping a sword formed from blood. Each Blood Knight possessed peak pseudo immortal stage cultivation and could unleash the attack power of that realm. They were like separate entities from the vampire king.

However, before the Blood Knights reached Aldrian's position, their speed began to slow. They tried to push forward, but their movement continued to decelerate.

In fact, the vampire king could feel a strange force surrounding him, making his body feel heavy.

He narrowed his eyes as he tried to sense the source of the disturbance, only to discover that it came from all directions around him.

It was as though something was pulling his body in multiple directions at once, and the force was so strong that it even affected the speed of the Blood Knights. The pull also affected the vessels that were trying to move forward, causing them to slow down, with some even beginning to be dragged backward.

The vampire king, frowning in confusion, suddenly felt a bad premonition, which left him alarmed.

He returned his focus to Aldrian, who seemed to be in the middle of doing something. The Blood Knights had already reached the avatar's body and begun attacking it, but their power seemed insufficient.

This strange gravity-like pull affected their strength, weakening them.

The vampire king unleashed another of his techniques to stop Aldrian from whatever he was trying to do. He slashed his palm, and from the wound, a line of blood appeared. From his own blood, a giant spear slowly began to take shape.

But before he could finish the technique, he suddenly felt the disturbance grow rapidly more chaotic, and the gravity intensified. With the stronger disturbance, he was finally able to sense its source.

He looked to his right and was stunned by what he saw.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1002 - 1002: The Terrifying Power

[1,716 words]

The vampire king saw that two kilometres away on his right side, space was bending, creating a kind of invisible ball at the center. The invisible ball was getting bigger quickly, and it was the source of the pulling force that placed the surrounding kilometres under its influence.

The vampire king could also sense that the same kind of ball had appeared two hundred kilometres away behind him on his left side. In fact, his spiritual sense, which could reach more than fifteen thousand kilometres, detected many of these invisible balls, and all of them were getting bigger and stronger.

Their suction force created chaotic space, where everyone located between them had difficulty even moving or using space laws.

'Are those... are those fucking black holes!' the vampire king thought in shock.

'This is bad. He could create black holes, a power of nature that could only be duplicated by cultivators at the immortal realm. And for him to create this many, are you fucking kidding me?! How is this possible?!

Even an immortal in the higher heaven who could create a black hole would have difficulty maintaining one. But this mortal here could create many black holes at the same time, and all of them seemed stable.

"What is that?"

"Is that a fucking black hole?! No! Full speed, don't let the vessel pass the black hole's area of no return!"

"We can't control the vessel! The vessel keeps getting dragged toward the black hole!"

"No!!"

"Escape! Escape! Get out of here!"

Many voices of panic and despair resounded from the many vessels. Their vessels could not be controlled as the black holes kept dragging them in. The first to become victims of the black holes were, of course, the ones located closest to them.

The moment their vessels touched the area of no return, they were instantly sucked toward the ball, whose size was much smaller than the vessels themselves. The vessels disintegrated, revealing their interiors, where the devils could be seen shouting in horror. Their fate had been sealed the moment they passed the area of no return and were dragged into the black holes.

After swallowing the vessels and everything inside them, the size of the black holes quickly increased. The suction force became much stronger, and with everything that fell into them, the black holes grew bigger and stronger.

In this short moment, the gravitational pull emitted by the black holes had already reached a point where doing anything became extremely difficult. Even lifting a finger became a struggle. The devils also could not absorb heaven and earth energy, as the energy in this region of space became chaotic and was drawn into the black holes.

Ao Tianhai, who witnessed all of this, was truly surprised that Aldrian could do all of this while still in the mortal realm. This kind of power and control was already beyond mortal means.

'As expected from the god of the gods,' he thought.

The vampire king, seeing everything happen in such a short time, grit his teeth and returned his focus to Aldrian.

Aldrian's expression remained focused, as if he were struggling to maintain the black holes.

The vampire king forced himself onward as he continued creating a giant spear using his blood. He was also under the heavy gravitational pull of the black holes, but he kept his position steady. He continued concentrating on forming the spear, and after he finally finished, the spear instantly burst forth with a terrifying aura.

The power within the spear was already far stronger than the peak pseudo immortal stage.

The blood knights were still trying to break Aldrian's avatar body to reach his real body, but the avatar was truly sturdy. It still withstood the combined attacks of the two blood knights.

Aldrian's posture also did not change, as if he did not want to lose even a split second of focus.

The vampire king picked up the spear and made a throwing pose. The muscles in his arm grew bigger and bulged as power gathered. Space at the tip of the spear cracked because of the power focusing there.

The blood knights retreated from the avatar as the vampire king ordered them back.

The vampire king then threw the spear, and it almost instantly reached the avatar's body with breathtaking speed, a speed that could pierce space itself.

But before the spear could touch the avatar's body, Ao Tianhai was already standing right in front of it and stretched out his hand as darkness appeared on his palm.

The spear, which carried power stronger than a peak pseudo immortal stage attack, suddenly stopped the moment it touched the darkness. The impact created a powerful shockwave before the spear was suddenly absorbed by the darkness.

Seeing this scene, the vampire king gritted his teeth and decided to use another weapon. Suddenly, a tattoo on the back of his hand shone for a moment before a red sword appeared in his grasp.

The sword carried a high divine-grade aura, along with an eerie aura of death and blood. The vampire king dashed toward Ao Tianhai.

Ao Tianhai, seeing the vampire king charge at him, smirked and approached him in a relaxed manner. It was as if the strong gravity surrounding them did not have much effect on them, even though they still felt its heaviness.

Ao Tianhai created a spatial shield in his hand and reinforced it with dragon scales. Even in this chaotic space and gravity, he could still manage to create a spatial shield.

Clash!

A red blood light shone the moment the sword and the spatial shield clashed.

As the two figures clashed, Aldrian did not lose focus and continued controlling everything he was doing at that moment. Besides maintaining the black holes, he also had to keep his avatar's technique active.

If Ao Tianhai did not jump in, he intended to take all the strikes using his avatar's defense. With his avatar's defense, he believed he could withstand any attack, whether physical or mental, even strikes far stronger than those from peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

The only challenge was how he could multitask while maintaining both his avatar and the many black holes. He needed to make sure all of them were in balance so their strength would not weaken and so his avatar was ready to receive a barrage of attacks.

But with Ao Tianhai's intervention, as he seemed unable to stand seeing him constantly being attacked and wanted to battle personally, everything became much easier. He did not have to worry about barrages of attacks from the vampire king or his other minions.

His soul would remain in good condition while he maintained the avatar and the black holes. He only needed to keep concentrating on strengthening the black holes.

Aldrian could sense that his black holes were working exactly as he had envisioned.

However, not all of the devils were entirely powerless against the suction force of the black holes. Those from the higher heavens quickly escaped from the vessels, and using their high comprehension of their elements, they tried to withstand the gravity.

Those who used flame tried to give themselves bursts of speed to escape the area of gravity. Those who comprehended space laws tried to use spatial movement to escape, despite the difficulty of controlling space.

Those with wind laws tried to propel themselves forward with strong winds that went against the black holes. There were various ways for them to try to escape their situation.

There were also many who used desperate measures, such as attacking the black holes with their most powerful techniques.

But unfortunately for them, what they did only strengthened the black holes instead. The black holes that sucked in everything were like bottomless abysses. No matter how big the object or how much they absorbed, everything disappeared behind the now visible darkness.

Now many of the black holes already had diameters of more than a hundred kilometres. Some of them even touched each other before swallowing one another, becoming even bigger black holes with far more powerful suction forces.

More than a million vessels were affected as the black holes continued dragging them toward their doom.

Those who could withstand the gravitational pull tried to help the vampire king. They knew they had to kill Aldrian if they wanted to stop this disaster.

But as the black holes grew stronger and many began to merge with each other, their efforts to resist the gravitational pull became much more difficult. Every elemental technique became useless, and they even had difficulty maintaining their movement.

In the end, they were also slowly dragged into the much bigger black holes.

The vampire king and Ao Tianhai also began to find it extremely difficult to move, which made Ao Tianhai decide to return inside Aldrian's avatar. The vampire king gritted his teeth in frustration and then looked behind him as his body was already being dragged toward it.

There was one black hole that had become the largest, having already swallowed all the other smaller black holes. His heart shuddered as he looked at the massive black hole. He did not know how many of his troops could survive this, but he could no longer see any of the interstellar vessels remaining within his sight.

His expression was fuming as he looked at Aldrian.

"YOU BASTARD!" he roared, but Aldrian only smirked without saying anything.

The vampire king kept gritting his teeth as he looked behind him, where the giant black hole was located.

The black hole had already formed its accretion disc, a shining disc of light surrounding its main body. Its gravitational pull had also begun to affect a wide region of space, and nearby asteroid belt were starting to be drawn into it.

The vampire king decided to use his life saving talisman as he crushed one of them.

A powerful spatial shield appeared around him, protecting his body from the chaotic space and even the gravitational pull. This talisman came from the higher heaven and was used to protect oneself from any external disturbance, hiding the user within a different layer of space.

The vampire king's body slowly stopped being pulled by the black hole. However, he could still feel the effects of the gravitational pull, as the black hole was actually affecting different layers of space!

He looked at some of his men who came from the higher heaven, and they were also using their own protective talismans.

They were still alive at this moment.

Aldrian, who could see that there were still survivors, smiled.

'Then, let's see if you can survive this.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1003 - 1003: “FUCK—“

[1,626 words]

The vampire king was still inside his spatial shield, which protected him from anything outside. His body existed in a different layer of space, so the effect of the black hole was reduced, but he was still being affected as he continued to be dragged by the gravitational pull.

Even more so, the black hole kept growing larger as it swallowed other smaller black holes. Its power became even more terrifying.

The vampire king knew that sooner or later he really could die if he did not do something to escape this situation. There was a time limit to the spatial shield that was protecting him.

Once the spatial shield disappeared, he would be dragged at a terrifying speed toward the black hole.

He thought that he could use a special escape talisman, which would allow him to instantly appear back in the central region of heaven.

However, the problem was that he was already close to the black hole, which at this moment was already the size of a planet, and the surrounding space was chaotic. There was a chance that he might instead become trapped in the chaotic void.

The black hole was truly interfering with anything related to spatial movement, and unfortunately his escape talisman was based on space laws or spatial movement.

If that happened, he had a chance of dying inside the void.

Trying to stop the black hole? How would he do that? By using his most powerful technique? Most likely, it would only strengthen the black hole instead.

Killing the one who created it? That would be extremely difficult. Even the two Blood Knights who had already disappeared were not enough to break that avatar's defense. There was also that dragon standing guard.

For the first time in a long while, he looked anxious. He could not find a good way to get out of this situation.

While he was still thinking about how to escape, he suddenly felt the black hole's gravitational pull grow weaker. The other devils who were still alive could also sense it, as they felt the effect on their bodies becoming weaker and weaker.

A few seconds later, they were stunned as the black hole's accretion disc started to turn chaotic before slowly disappearing into space. The shape of the black hole itself also began to become disordered.

The vampire king, who did not know what had happened, instantly looked toward Aldrian in the distance.

'Did he lose control of the black hole? It seems so. There is no way he could maintain this kind of technique for too long. He must have exhausted all of his energy. The fact that he could create many black holes while simultaneously controlling an avatar is already a miracle. This is the first time I have ever seen such a thing.' He thought.

He then looked at his surviving underlings.

"Attack that bastard who is casting the black hole and execute that traitor! He has already exhausted his energy maintaining the black hole. This is our chance. I will face that dragon!" he shouted.

The other devils understood. The moment they realized that the black hole's suction force was no longer a threat, they left the spatial shield and flew toward Aldrian.

The vampire king had already readied his sword again to face Ao Tianhai, but the moment he saw Aldrian's face, he saw Aldrian smiling at him.

It was a smile that gave him a bad premonition, and at that moment, something finally clicked in his mind.

'Wait. If he exhausted all of his energy, then why is his avatar still active?'

He then saw Aldrian's lips move, forming a motion as if he said, "Boom."

A sudden chill ran through his chest. He immediately looked behind him and saw that the black hole had already lost its spherical shape. It was as if something was about to burst from inside.

The moment vampire king turned his head to look at the black hole, Aldrian teleported his group away, leaving the devils behind.

The devils who were about to attack were stunned when Aldrian and his group disappeared, but then they turned to look at the black hole, which was suddenly exuding a terrifying amount of energy.

The vampire king widened his eyes in shock as he finally realized what was about to happen, but it was already too late for him to do anything. He grabbed whatever talisman he could from his pouch as he shouted,

"FUCK—"

BOOOOOOM!!!!!!!

In the Ancient Blue Gate World, Aldrian's family waited in anxiety. After hearing from Angelica what Aldrian had to face, their hearts became unsettled.

Despite having faith in him, they could not help but feel worried. From what Angelica told them, Aldrian was facing a number of devils that could throw the entire central star cluster into chaos.

A sea of devils that seemed to have no end was advancing toward this world, and Aldrian was facing them at this moment. The scale of the devil troops was something the entire central star cluster had never seen before.

Even though Aldrian had brought Ao Tianhai with him, they still felt restless. Aldrian's solemn expression from earlier did not help either.

Were only the two of them enough?

Sylphia, who was usually the most confident in Aldrian, could not help but worry as well. From how Angelica described her vision and how the devils could spread annihilation across an entire star cluster, her heart could not remain calm.

She also knew that Aldrian had not told her about this matter because he did not want her to worry. She sighed and looked at her mother-in-law, who was hugging Celestina as if seeking comfort.

"We can only believe in him. If he said he could take care of them, then there is nothing more we can do. I believe he has already prepared for this day. Aldrian has already succeeded in many things without preparation. What if he has prepared beforehand? He must have already made sure that the devils will not be able to reach this place," she said to the others.

Irene, who was also hugging Celestina, sighed softly and nodded.

"You are right, but as a mother I just couldn't help—" Before she could finish her words, Sylphia and several others suddenly turned their heads toward the sky. She followed their gaze, and what she saw made her raise her eyebrows.

The sun was already nearing the western horizon, so a large part of the sky was no longer as bright as it had been hours ago. Because of that, what they saw at this moment was quite clear to their eyes.

A beautiful nebula had appeared in the sky. Despite its size not being large compared to the sky, it was still distinctive, because the nebula had not been there before. Only some of them had seen the moment when the nebula suddenly appeared.

"What is that?" Irene asked.

"I think something burst in distant space," Sylphia answered.

At this moment, some people who noticed the change in the sky looked up at it in wonder. What had happened?

Those who understood about space began to speculate whether a star or a planet had gone supernova.

In another place, far away from the explosion, Aldrian and his group were observing the result of Aldrian's creation. The nebula formed after the supernova was beautifully reflected in their eyes.

This was something Aldrian had come up with after thinking deeply about black holes, one of the most powerful natural phenomena, something that even cultivators across all heavens did not dare to underestimate.

A dense mass that could pull and swallow everything into darkness. Extreme gravity that would destroy anything that entered its body.

To create a black hole, what Aldrian needed to do was compress energy as densely as possible into a single point using gravity.

He had to create the strongest gravity he had ever produced, and he used the many domains he had already scattered across space as the foundation that became the base of the black holes.

With his domains, his work became much easier, as his control over everything inside them was almost absolute.

He had already tried several times in the past to create black holes before implementing them against the vampire king's army.

The moment the black hole was created, Aldrian could have simply let it grow by itself.

However, in this battle, he needed the black holes to grow much faster so they could swallow the massive armada as quickly as possible.

Besides pulling in everything nearby, he also continued injecting his golden energy into them to force their growth.

The quantity of energy required alone was truly terrifying, and if he did not have his domains, it would have been impossible to supply so many black holes.

It became much easier to maintain once all of them finally merged into a single massive black hole, the end product of his scattered black hole tactic.

But there was another terrifying weapon hidden within his artificial black hole.

Because Aldrian was the one who controlled the black hole, he could do something even more frightening.

Make it explode.

Make it go supernova.

Normally, a black hole could not go supernova because it was not a star. It was a dense mass of energy bound by extreme gravity.

But Aldrian could make it happen.

How?

By releasing all the dense energy inside the black hole by making the gravity disappear completely. Once the gravity vanished, the black hole would lose its balance.

The dense energy within the singularity would burst outward. Everything that had already been absorbed by the black hole, which had further energized it, would also explode. The scale of explosion that could obliterate an entire world the size of the Ancient Blue Gate World.

A true weapon of mass destruction, a technique capable of ending an entire world.

Because of that scale, Aldrian knew he could not recklessly use the black hole technique.

After spending a few moments admiring the beauty of the supernova's aftereffects, Aldrian finally opened his lips.

"Let's see if they could survive that."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1004 - 1004: The Aftermath

[1,682 words]

Aldrian and his group appeared again at the place where they had faced the Vampire King and his army. The moment they appeared, they were instantly surrounded by a colourful nebula. The beautiful nebula filled their sight, but the space itself was truly chaotic.

In the distance, where the black hole had been located earlier, a giant spatial rift was closing. It created a great spatial storm, but because it was in space and there was nothing in its surroundings, the effect was not as devastating.

Ao Tianhai, who was observing the aftermath, was truly amazed by it. This might be the greatest power that a mortal could ever show. A power that could obliterate an entire large planet.

This supernova was caused by a destabilized black hole with a size smaller than the Ancient Blue Gate World. This size of black hole was truly small compared to natural black holes spread across the universe.

But what if Aldrian could make the black hole much bigger? What if the black hole's size was like that of a supermassive black hole? One whose size alone could engulf an entire star cluster?

Wouldn't that mean that Aldrian could destroy an entire galaxy with it? He might even be able to destroy one percent of space in the First Heaven if he could make the black hole huge enough to do that.

That area was the size of the central star cluster and extended a little further than the northern star cluster.

Just imagining that Aldrian could potentially do that as a mortal made Ao Tianhai's heart shudder.

With that kind of power, if he were in the same realm as Aldrian, there was no way he could withstand this kind of absolute power.

He did not know whether Aldrian could truly do what he had imagined, but what Aldrian had just done was already impossible.

He did not know what Aldrian's limit was, and Aldrian was the reincarnation of a past mighty being whom even all beings and their gods in the past had worshipped.

"If this is what he can do as a mortal, then what could he do as a god? Or even when he touches the realm of the Master of Universe?" Ao Tianhai thought.

"No wonder countless beings put their hope in him to get rid of the invaders entirely. Once he reaches divinity and even reaches Master of Universe realm, I doubt any of those invaders could do anything to him. He will be an unstoppable force."

Ao Tianhai's reverence and piety toward Aldrian soared. Now he could see for himself what kind of being the one before him was, a being that many gods also worshipped. This was the real deal. The one who could flip the entire fate of the universe was exactly like this.

He could finally feel what the ancient gods in the past had felt toward Aldrian.

Xarz, who could only watch from the beginning, truly felt like he might go crazy. He had already thought that Aldrian was crazily powerful. A walking disaster. An unstoppable force that no one could face.

But what he had seen just now truly made him question what Aldrian truly was.

There was no way that Aldrian was a mortal. He might be an immortal like the Vampire King. But he had seen it himself. The Vampire King was not as strong as Aldrian.

Far from it. They were like heaven and earth.

Then if he was not an immortal, was he a god? A god descended to the First Heaven? Maybe that was the case.

No wonder he could fight their god.

Aldrian, oblivious to Ao Tianhai's feelings and Xarz's thoughts toward him, looked at his surroundings. The aftermath caused by the supernova still made the space quite chaotic. If he used his normal spiritual sense, then his perception would be slightly inaccurate because the space had not yet entirely stabilized.

He then checked using his domain sense to see if there were any survivors inside his domain. After a few seconds of searching, he found nothing.

"Well, I do not think there are any survivors after what just happened, Your Majesty. The only thing I can imagine allowing them to survive is if they somehow activated a talisman from the Higher Heavens that could withstand a supernova of this scale," Ao Tianhai commented.

Aldrian was still looking at his surroundings. "Let's look around first to make sure. You check that direction, and I will check here."

There were places that were not covered by his domain, and those were his blind spots in this chaotic space.

"Yes, Your Majesty." They then started moving. Xarz followed Aldrian even though Aldrian had not said anything to him. It was just that he unconsciously felt compelled to follow him.

After a few minutes of searching, an incoming voice transmission from Ao Tianhai reached Aldrian.

"Your Majesty, I found a survivor. It is him, the Vampire King. Should I kill him?"

Aldrian raised his eyebrows.

"Wait. Let me see him," he replied before moving toward Ao Tianhai's location using teleportation. Xarz, who was left behind, frantically tried to keep up with Aldrian.

The moment Aldrian appeared beside Ao Tianhai, he could see a figure in a pitiful state. No, calling it pitiful was an understatement. It was horrifying.

The figure was unconscious and had lost the entire right side of his body, including half of his face. He was bald, and burn wounds covered his body. His intestines and heart were exposed, beating slowly, as if they could stop at any moment.

The Vampire King is still alive, though he was clearly in a dying state. Aldrian could see that the Vampire King's body was slowly trying to heal itself and regenerate its lost limbs.

The regeneration of a vampire was showing its wonder here.

But the speed of recovery was extremely slow, far from the recovery speed of an immortal realm vampire.

Aldrian knew the reason. The supernova had left behind powerful residual energy that severely damaged his body. The massive explosion had ejected various mixed energies and chaotic spatial forces that swept through the Vampire King's body and became embedded within it, slowing the regeneration process.

"From the way I see it, this bastard was lucky to have activated some kind of protective means at the last second before the supernova. Unfortunately, the supernova was still far too strong, especially since he was near the black hole. There is no way he would still be alive without some form of protection," Ao Tianhai commented.

"Should we kill him, Your Majesty?" Ao Tianhai asked.

Aldrian did not answer immediately. He looked at the Vampire King for a moment before shaking his head.

"No. After thinking it through, I can obtain a great deal of useful information from him. We will keep him alive for now," he answered.

Aldrian then looked toward one side when he saw Xarz trying to catch up to him. Once Xarz arrived near them, he saw the horrific sight of a figure that made his heart tremble.

He then recognized who the figure was, which made it hard for him to believe that the vampire king was still alive in such a state.

Xarz saw Aldrian approach him and place a hand on his shoulder.

"Good job for everything that you have done all this time," Aldrian said, patting Xarz's shoulder twice.

Xarz was stunned when he heard it, then his eyes glistened. His heart felt proud. This was the first time he had heard Aldrian say something like that to him. He was glad that he had managed to satisfy this monster.

He wanted to reply to Aldrian, but Aldrian continued. "I hope in your next life, you will be a better person and not become what you were in this life."

Xarz froze. Then his eyes widened as he felt something slash past his neck. The next moment, the world turned upside down, and he saw his own headless body for a brief instant.

'Is this my end?' he thought one last time before his vision turned to darkness.

Xarz, the former devils leader of the Fallen Star Cluster, finally died. Aldrian thought that he no longer needed Xarz, as he had obtained a much bigger fish, one far more useful than Xarz.

Aldrian then burned Xarz's corpse until it turned to ash before turning back to the Vampire King and approaching him. He needed to heal the vampire first so he could be pulled back from his critical state.

With his golden energy, he cleaned away the residual energy from the supernova and then regenerated the Vampire King's body.

Ao Tianhai, who was watching the regeneration process, was truly amazed. Aldrian's golden energy was an incredible energy, one that he still could not understand how it could exist.

He had only ever sensed this kind of energy from two of the five Divine Overlords in the past, the Dragon God and the Phoenix God.

Although what they possessed was less pure than what he sensed from Aldrian, it was still the same golden energy.

In the past, he had heard stories that their energy had come from the Great Emperor, the sole source of that golden energy.

This made him wonder how the Great Emperor could possess such an energy.

But he did not think too deeply about it. The only thing that mattered now was that he would always follow the Great Emperor to regain his position at the peak of all beings.

After almost two minutes, the Vampire King's body had already fully regenerated, complete with his long hair and dangling dick. However, he was still unconscious.

Aldrian then dragged the Vampire King's body to his closest domain before teleporting the king's body to his palace. This act of dragging confused Ao Tianhai, which was normal, since he could not sense Aldrian's domain at all.

However, he did not ask, and Aldrian had no intention of explaining.

"Let's search further to see if there are any survivors. This time, if you find any survivors, just kill them. We already have the most important intel, so there is no need for any others," Aldrian said.

"Yes, Your Majesty."

They then searched for any survivors for the next hour before finally stopping. They did not find any other survivors and concluded that there were none left.

After that, Aldrian finally brought them back to his palace.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 1005 - 1005: Sad and Angry

Chapter 1005 - 1005: Sad and Angry

[1,510 words]

Aldrian and Ao Tianhai appeared back in the garden where his family was already waiting for his return. The moment he appeared, they were stunned, but then they finally sighed in relief. Irene and Sylphia stood up.

"Son." Irene said as she rushed toward Aldrian with Celestina in her arms. Sylphia also followed her.

Seeing his family again, Aldrian finally showed his warm smile once more. Irene arrived in front of Aldrian and checked his condition for a moment.

"Are you okay? I already knew what happened, and you really made us worry," she asked.

"I'm fine, Mother. Don't you see there is nothing wrong with me?" Aldrian answered as he raised both of his hands, showing that he was fine.

Irene sighed in relief once again. "So everything is fine? After I heard what you had to face, I truly thought this time might be serious and that something could go wrong. You looked very serious earlier."

"Well, I did not deny that I considered this matter seriously and prepared a plan B if my plan failed. But fortunately, everything went according to what I had planned, and those devils did not have anything that could make me fail," Aldrian said. He then looked at Sylphia, who was standing beside him, and smiled at her.

He kissed her forehead and held her hand before he looked at the others, who were looking at him with relief.

"I'm sorry if I never told you about this, but this is something I thought I could take care of myself without telling anyone. I just did not want to add unnecessary worry for you when I believed I could handle it on my own."

"This is also caused by me, which is why those devils came with such large armies. That made me feel responsible for solving it without having to drag others into it."

Sylphia narrowed her eyes. "Why are you saying that this was caused by you? Is it because the devils in other places know about the Fallen Star Cluster and came after you?"

Aldrian smiled at her. "No. Something like that is not enough to make them come on the scale that I just faced. I will tell you why..."

Aldrian then sat down with the others. Ao Tianhai tried to keep some distance, as he did not want to intrude on Aldrian's private time with his family.

However, Aldrey and Irene did not mind his presence and told him that he could stay close to them. They felt thankful that he had followed Aldrian and that Aldrian could trust him. They did not want him to feel as though he was being set aside. In the end, Ao Tianhai stayed closer to them as Aldrian also permitted it.

Aldrian then told them what happened when he killed Rulleus and about the vampire king and his army that made their journey. After hearing the sequence of events, they finally understood why Aldrian thought that this was his responsibility.

Then Aldrey asked him, "If the vampire king has lost his position, then what will happen to the other devils in the First Heaven? With how they lost their leader, it must create an uproar in the central region of Heaven."

Aldrian looked at his father. "That's true, however, the vampire king is not the only leader of the devils in the First Heaven, as he is only one of the four overlords who rule the devil troops."

"With me wiping out the vampire king's army, it will cause an uproar and will surely reach the other three overlords. They will finally know that there is an existence that can threaten them, and they might start to put their attention on the southern part of the First Heaven. On this place."

"They might come with a much bigger army, and even the other three overlords might personally come."

Hearing that, the others frowned, as the problem with the devils seemed to always come back. When they thought that they could at least relax for a moment after getting rid of the devils in this world and the surrounding worlds, the devil problem always came from another direction.

"That's why I will have to make the journey to the central region of Heaven myself as quickly as possible, before all of them can reorganize and make their move. I will strike them before they can prepare and catch them off guard," Aldrian continued, which made the others widen their eyes.

"What? Alone again?" Aldrey asked.

Aldrian was silent for a moment before he nodded. "I'm afraid yes. It's much safer if I depart alone, and I actually planned this a long time ago. This is something that I need to do to take care of the devil problem in the First Heaven once and for all."

Hearing that, the others' expressions turned various. His parents looked sad, his harem looked at him with frowns, and Sylphia even looked angry. Eleine and Ao Tianhai also frowned, and Ao Tianhai spoke.

"Your Majesty, let me come with you. Although I know Your Majesty is strong, having another hand to help will make your journey easier, right?" But Aldrian shook his head.

"You stay here and protect my family. With me annihilating the vampire king's army, I don't know what will happen next. I want you to stay here just in case something happens," he said.

"But—"

Before Ao Tianhai could reply, Sylphia suddenly stood up and rushed into the palace. Aldrian was stunned, as he seemed to see her eyes filled with tears for a moment. The others remained silent, but more or less understood why Sylphia had walked away and looked upset.

Aldrey sighed and said to Aldrian, "Go to her. You should soothe her. She must be really worried about you but just can't say it here."

Without being told twice, Aldrian stood up and pursued Sylphia.

Baek Jimin and Angelica also stood up and entered the palace.

The ones who were clueless were Celestina and Sylvia. Both children could only look at the adults with oblivious expressions. Sylvia, who usually always wanted to stay with Aldrian, seemed to sense that the atmosphere was not good, so she became calmer.

Aldrian, who was pursuing Sylphia, sensed that she was inside their bedroom. After he reached the bedroom, he saw her sitting on the far edge of the bed, with her back facing him.

From behind, he could see her repeatedly wiping her face with her hands.

Aldrian sighed and walked into the bedroom, and circling around the bed.

Finally, he could see her side profile, which was shedding tears at this moment. She kept wiping her tears, but they kept coming, and she ignored his presence, which made him sigh again.

He then took a seat beside her and spoke softly.

"My love, I'm sorry if I made you sad. I'm truly sorry."

She remained silent and continued shedding tears. Hearing no response, Aldrian decided to embrace her shoulders and gently stroke them. Sylphia still did not react, which made him speak again.

"My love, please talk to me. It pains me to see how I made my beloved wife cry, yet you won't say anything to me."

Sylphia finally turned her head and slightly moved away from him, showing her teary eyes to Aldrian for a moment.

They showed her sadness and her anger.

She then rested her forehead on his shoulder, and finally, she opened her lips.

"I'm truly sad and angry. I'm truly sad about how you always take care of the big problems and put yourself in danger, as if you are being pushed by something. And I'm truly angry. I'm angry at myself because I cannot be of any help to you. I'm too weak to do anything meaningful for you, even though I already received the blessing from Goddess Seralis."

"I want to be angry at you because you seemed not open to me regarding this matter, but I can't. I can't be angry at you. How could I be angry at you? You have good reasons for not being too open to me or anyone. You are always doing your best so we can live comfortably without worry." She wiped her tears again.

"I know that in one of your past lives, you were not an ordinary person, and you seemed to carry heavy responsibilities on your shoulders and a target that you had to achieve. After meeting Goddess Seralis, I know that you are some kind of mighty being that even she cannot fathom."

"But it still makes me upset that I cannot do anything, when as husband and wife we should be helping each other. Yet I cannot do anything except watch you repeatedly move alone, without me or anyone able to help you."

"I truly feel weak and powerless. If only my cultivation had reached the peak pseudo immortal stage at this moment, then maybe I could somehow help you now."

She then fell silent.

Hearing her heart's voice, Aldrian finally understood, and the expression he had while listening to her slowly turned into a soft smile.

He slightly turned his body towards her, cupped her face, and made her tear-stained face look directly at him.

His smile was soothing as he spoke softly to her.

"I love you. I truly love you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1006 - 1006: Opening Some of His Secret

[1,521 words]

Sylphia's teary expression was slightly flushed, yet she continued to look directly into Aldrian's eyes.

"I know," she replied.

Aldrian, still wearing his warm smile, wiped her tears with his fingers while cupping her face with both hands.

"I think I need to say a few things to you, so you don't have to think too hard about this matter and make yourself sad. It truly pains me to see you like this," Aldrian said as he stroked her cheek.

Sylphia remained silent, and her tears slowly began to stop.

"I want to make something clear. It might sound harsh, but I have to say it. This is also the first time I am opening some of my past that I have kept as a secret," Aldrian continued.

"You know that I have an unordinary origin in one of my past lives, right?"

Sylphia responded with a nod.

"My true origin is something that even the gods in the highest heaven don't know. Even I am still searching for the truth about myself, about my true origin. However, what I know and remember is that I am the being those gods worship."

"Someone like Goddess Seralis, the ancient dragon god, the first phoenix's existence, and countless other ancient gods, they bow and even prostrate the moment they meet me."

"Even Heavenly Demon that described as someone who always tries to defy the rules of the heavens, reveres me and still obeys my will."

"In that life, when I was surrounded by those gods, I was the being who sat at the top and ruled over all of them, all beings. This universe and countless others across the cosmos, everything was within my grasp. I was a solitary being, one whom only some dared to meet."

"The heavens obeyed my will and did not dare disobey me. Do you know that during our wedding, and my wedding with Jimin, I had to command the heavens to give me the same treatment as any other normal being?"

"If I did not do that, the heavens would grant me privileges and show no reaction when I declared my oath to you. I had to order them to respond because they were too afraid to treat me like any other being. Yes, you are right. The heavens fear me."

Hearing all of this, Sylphia's heart and soul trembled. Her eyes widened, as she did not expect Aldrian to be this special. She knew that Aldrian was extraordinary, so much so that even her god did not know the entire truth about him.

But what Aldrian had just described was beyond anything she had imagined.

If Aldrian explained it like this, then what was he really? The god of those gods? The creator?

Her mind nearly stopped working, and she did not know what to think.

Who was the man to whom she had already given her entire heart? What was his true origin?

"However, despite being a solitary being, I still have countless connections with those who worship and revere me. Many of them are close to me," Aldrian continued.

"But because of some unknown reason that I am still trying to find, I had to leave them and enter the cycle of reincarnation. I experienced many things, and it was during those reincarnations that I met you." He smiled warmly.

"I found you and created a fate and connection that have lasted until this moment."

Sylphia's heart could not help but flutter. Aldrian continued speaking.

"In those lives, I met many people, and you must know that Angelica has also had the same experience as you. Yes, she is also one of the people I met across various reincarnations."

"Now, in this life, all of them seem to have reunited with me. My current life is a special one to me."

Aldrian's expression then turned slightly serious.

"However, while I was gone through various reincarnations, leaving behind all those who worshiped me, this universe, the one we are living in right now, fell into danger. This universe is under attack by countless other universes."

"Countless gods from other universes are invading this universe, intending to take it over and killing many of my followers and other beings. The ones we call devils now are only followers of one of those gods. There are others like the devil god."

"Our forces in this universe keep getting pushed back, and in the end, only the first heaven, the last heaven, and the heaven we currently live in remain unconquered. Now you know how serious the situation is and the reality this universe is facing at this moment."

Sylphia was truly shocked, and she could not help but feel the weight of the dire situation they were in. Then, realization finally settled in.

"I see, so that is how it is. All of the things that happened... all of his plans are because of those invaders. He is striking back at those invaders and preventing them from conquering the last bastion of this universe." She felt enlightened.

That was why he looked so rushed. The situation forced him to act this way. Time kept ticking, and if he did not do something quickly, those invaders would soon conquer the entire first heaven, their home.

Why did Aldrian always fight the devils wherever he went or whenever he heard of their presence, even when it was not his problem? She finally understood the answer.

"Those who worshiped me in the past and still do today are placing their hopes in me and paving a path for me so I can regain my power and return to the place where I belong. To do that, I have to get rid of all those invaders, and they believe that I am the only one who can do so."

"This place, for example, was already prepared for me by those you know, whom I have already introduced to you. The ancient dragon god and the phoenix god, the first dragon and phoenix in existence, Long Shentian and Feng Xuanyan. This place which, in the end, became our home and a safe place."

"With many gods working together, they already knew that I would appear here and what I would have to face. If not for them preparing everything on this continent for me to utilize, I would likely have already died when I faced the devil god, Tarius."

"All those people who have already placed their hopes in me and sacrificed many things for my sake are making sure that I can regain my power, just like in the past, as soon as possible. If you see me going to dangerous places in different worlds, then those places are ones the gods have already prepared for me to enter. They give anything that can help me there."

Hearing all of that, Sylphia's eyes, which had already stopped shedding tears, suddenly watered again.

Now everything made sense. Most of the mysteries surrounding him were answered by this confession.

But she could only imagine the weight of the burden on his shoulders. The entire universe was placing its hope on him. The gods of this universe, who kept getting pushed back by those invaders, were now placing their hope in Aldrian, who was still a mortal, to turn the situation around.

It made her extremely sad that he had to walk this path and that fate had shaped him this way. A path filled with battle and struggle.

"I have to keep growing stronger and stronger so I can help all those who put their hopes in me. I do not want to disappoint them. This is also for me, for you, and for all of us, so we can live safely in the end without having to worry about the problem of those invaders."

"That is also why every time I fight the devils, it is always on a large scale. I kill as many of them as possible. To weaken the invaders' influence, I need to get rid of their followers." Aldrian then looked in another direction.

"I would only accept help from you or others if it is still within your capability to handle. But because the things I face are mostly beyond all of your capabilities, I have to move alone."

"Now you know why I move mostly on my own. What I face is something only I can deal with, and what I can do makes me the only being who can fulfill the countless hopes placed on my shoulders."

Aldrian then looked into Sylphia's eyes again.

"Even if you were a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator right now, I would still make the journey to the central region of heaven alone. What I will do there will be much easier if I am alone. I will face the entire headquarters force of the enemies, and that is something only I can do with my abilities."

His eyes were filled with conviction and seriousness.

"All of this is my destiny and the fate I created myself."

Then silence fell. Sylphia was already shedding tears again after hearing his secret and the reason he did all of this.

She suddenly hugged him tightly.

Aldrian also hugged her gently and stroked her back. Her tears soaked his clothes, but he did not react and continued soothing her.

After a few moments, when only her sniffles could be heard, she finally spoke.

"I'm sorry."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1007 - 1007: Not Like in the Past

[1,616 words]

"I'm sorry," Sylphia said in between her tears.

Aldrian raised his eyebrows and smiled.

"What are you sorry for? There is nothing you need to be sorry about," he said.

"I don't know. I just want to say I'm sorry. Maybe I just feel guilty for crying and making you feel pain when you already have that kind of burden on your shoulders. You have such a big responsibility, as if you are carrying the entire universe on your shoulders, and you must stay strong for those who place their hope in you."

"Yet I'm crying, showing my weakness, and blaming myself. I even tried to be angry at you when I'm supposed to understand you better and not arrogantly think that I could help you in your grand scheme just by becoming stronger."

Aldrian kept stroking her hair as he listened, maintaining his smile.

"Sh, sh, sh. You don't need to be sorry. That is not something you should apologize for. Everything you said is a natural reaction, because you did not understand the entire situation. Instead, I'm glad you could feel that way for me. That means you truly care about me, my dear."

"And you are not arrogant for thinking you could help me if you become stronger. Didn't you hear me say that I mostly move alone? That also means there are still parts where I need help from others. If you are stronger, then you can help me more, so what you think is not entirely wrong."

"But once again, there are situations where I need to move alone. Even if you were the strongest cultivator in the First Heaven, I would still be the only one who could carry out what I have planned in my mind. That is because my abilities and capabilities go beyond what any cultivator could comprehend."

Sylphia smiled slightly through her tears.

"What an arrogant scoundrel," she said softly, which made him smile even more.

"Well, what could I say? That is the truth," he said in a joking tone. He was still stroking her head before looking toward the door of their room, which was still open.

"Don't you think so, Jimin, Angelica?" he asked, which made Sylphia slightly stunned as she turned her head toward the door.

A moment later, Baek Jimin and Angelica entered the room with reddened, watery eyes. It was obvious that they had also been crying, just like Sylphia, which made her even more stunned.

Because she had been too focused on herself, she truly did not sense their presence earlier. Since when had they been listening?

"Come here," Aldrian said as he gave a sign for them to sit near him.

Baek Jimin and Angelica did as they were told. Baek Jimin sat right beside Aldrian, while Angelica knelt in front of him. Suddenly, they both hugged his body, which made him stunned. They buried their faces against him, hiding their expressions from his sight.

Being hugged by three beauties made his heart feel as if it were blooming with flowers at this moment. He hoped that time would stop, allowing him to feel this sensation forever.

"To think that you carry that kind of burden on your shoulders, I'm truly sad that you must always think about it and keep moving forward with the hope of the entire universe pushing you," Baek Jimin said.

"You must feel lonely, having to take all of that burden and hope alone. Not having anyone who could share it with you. It must be difficult for you to store all of that by yourself," Angelica said softly.

Aldrian smiled at them and kissed each of their heads.

"I consider the hope of the entire universe, the hope of many people, the people close to me as my strength to move forward. They give me purpose and something that I need to achieve. They are willing to sacrifice everything so I can keep moving forward, so I must stay strong for them and for all of you."

"Lonely? That might be true if it were my past life, when I was still a solitary man who did not truly have connections like I do in this life. In this life, I have the three of you. I have a father and a mother, my parents-in-law, the people whom I can confidently call my family."

"I don't feel lonely. Instead, all of you strengthen my resolve to get rid of those invaders for the sake of our better lives. I want to fulfill my role and fate as soon as possible, so we can live happily without having to worry about them anymore."

"Especially you three beauties, who always give me a heart full of flowers, always giving me joy in whatever I do and at any moment. How could I feel lonely? Just look at this moment. Being hugged by three beauties like this, I don't need to ask for anything more. This alone is enough to make me feel accompanied and energized to face all those invaders."

The three ladies could only smile at his words. Then Baek Jimin lifted her head and looked at him with a sulking expression.

"You said earlier that you met Sylphia in your past lives. Sylphia and Angelica had similar experiences, and they already told their stories during our girls' talk. But why didn't I have the same experience as them? I never had any of those dreams, and you also never said that you saw me in your past lives," she said.

Her tone clearly carried a sense of being left out, which made Aldrian understand her feelings. He smiled at her gently, trying to soothe her heart.

"Well, I also don't know the real reason why you are different from Sylphia and Angelica. But there is a possibility that this life is the first time we have met. Of course, that would mean we do not share past lives like Sylphia and Angelica do, and you only became my wife starting from this life," he said, calmly stating his speculation.

"This is also a fate. We met in this life, and you became my wife. You comprehended the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture, while I comprehended the Heavenly Demon Scripture."

"You know, just like the Heavenly Demon who created the Heavenly Demon Scripture, and his wife who created the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture."

Hearing that, Sylphia and Angelica were truly surprised. This was the first time they had heard about the origin of the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture, and even more so, the fact that the Heavenly Demon had a wife.

Baek Jimin thought for a moment before nodding. "That makes sense," she said, then smiled at him.

"I see. So from this life onward, I will be stuck with you forever, right?" she added in a teasing tone.

"Of course. You will be stuck with me forever. Even if you somehow enter the reincarnation cycle, you will always come back to me. Even if you try to run away, I will come find you and pursue you. You will not escape from me," Aldrian replied lovingly.

"Well, that sounds romantic and hot...It makes me want to try it," Baek Jimin said playfully.

"Jimin, what are you talking about? You are not trying something like that," Sylphia scolded her.

"Just joking, Sister, just joking," Baek Jimin replied quickly.

"Dear, you once said that the reason you entered dangerous places across various worlds was because those places had already been prepared for you by your followers in the past. So, does Ao Tianhai's origin have something to do with them as well?" Angelica suddenly asked.

Aldrian nodded. "Yes. In fact, he is a god. A true god, a being who has already reached the realm of divinity in cultivation. His real cultivation is sealed, which is why you can only sense his strength at the peak pseudo immortal stage."

The three ladies were utterly shocked. Had they really been living alongside a god all this time?

They could not be blamed for thinking that way, considering how Ao Tianhai acted in front of Aldrian. He was extremely submissive, nothing like a high level cultivator with great pride or self-esteem.

That also explained why Ao Tianhai had acted so respectfully toward them the moment he saw them after coming out of the Divine Wrath Sea region in the Blue Pearl World.

However, the three ladies then thought the same thing.

Doesn't that mean they have a source of an information that might explaining what kind of Aldrian in his past life?

If Ao Tianhai is a god that know Aldrian in his past life then he must know many things about him, right?

They wanted to hear it from a third-party perspective. They wanted to know what kind of man Aldrian from Ao Tianhai's story.

Aldrian, knowing what kind of thoughts his harem had now from their reactions, only stayed silent. He did not mind that they talked to Ao Tianhai and asked him about his past life.

After that, Aldrian and his women talked about many things. As he became more open about himself, there were many things his women wished to ask and understand.

They continued their conversation until past midnight.

Worn out from the long conversation and the tears they had shed, the ladies gradually relaxed and fell asleep together on the same bed without even realizing it.

This was the first time the three ladies slept on the same bed, and Aldrian quietly looked at them with a smile.

He then quietly left them so as not to wake them up and walked to the garden, where he could see the night sky.

The bright moon and countless stars bathed the surroundings in a calming glow, filling him with a sense of peace while also showing him the grandeur of the universe.

"Son."

Suddenly, his father's voice called out to him, prompting him to look to the side.

He instantly showed a warm smile as Aldrey approached him.

"Father."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1008 - 1008: Heart to Heart 1

[1,600 words]

Aldrey approached Aldrian with a smile, and after he stood near him, he spoke again.

"How are your wives? Is there any problem?"

"No, Father. Everything is okay," Aldrian replied.

"That is good to hear. I was really worried, as this is the first time I have seen Sylphia show such a reaction toward you."

"We already talked about this matter and soothed her worries. She is a truly caring woman, which is why she became slightly upset." Aldrian said.

Aldrey nodded and then fell into silence, enjoying the night sky together with Aldrian.

"Would you like to accompany me for a night talk, son?" Aldrey suddenly asked.

"It would be my pleasure, Father," Aldrian replied without hesitation. They then sat on a bench located not far from them.

As they sat side by side and looked at the sky, Aldrey opened his lips.

"In the past, at this very time after midnight, before your mother and I were trapped inside the secret realm, we sometimes exchanged messages using pieces of paper that we sent through our trusted people to evade our families' detection. That period was truly full of struggle, even just to communicate and relieve our longing."

"With the poor relationship between the Flamecrest and Rivas families, I had already prepared for my father to exile me from the family, just so I could be with your mother. Yet here we are, still maintaining good relationships with our families and having our own little family."

"Sometimes, I still cannot believe that I now have a family with the woman I love. And now we even have you, and then Celestina, our little angel. If I told my past self at that time about my current life, he would probably think that I had already gone crazy."

Aldrian smiled upon hearing that, and Aldrey continued.

"Sometimes, I am afraid that it is only an illusion or a dream. That when I wake up, I am still inside the Flamecrest family's mansion, your mother is still in the Rivas family, and we have to exchange messages using pieces of paper again."

Aldrey then paused, causing the atmosphere to fall into silence once more.

"Father, actually, I am really curious about how you and Mother fell in love with each other. How could two successors of two families that did not have a good relationship become attracted to each other?" Aldrian asked after a few seconds of silence.

Aldrey could not help but smile upon hearing that question, and his gaze toward the night sky turned reminiscent. His mind was brought back to the past, to when he was still a young master full of idealism.

"Well, the time it took for your mother and me to develop feelings for each other was not short. It took years, and there were many unpleasant encounters."

"We were already indoctrinated by our families, just like other successors of noble families, which caused us to hate each other. We had a few chances to fight, and I have to tell you that your mother truly earned her title as the Blizzard Witch through her strength. Even I did not dare to underestimate her when she became serious."

"She is one hell of a woman."

Aldrian and Aldrey chuckled at the same time. After that, Aldrey continued.

"However, as time passed and we met many times through various circumstances, we started to develop different feelings instead. The hate and all the doctrines I carried from my family were slowly replaced by curiosity and attraction."

"Moreover, with our family territories bordering the devil territory directly, sometimes we helped each other fend off devils trying to infiltrate our lands. Sometimes, I found your mother in difficult situations and helped her, and she also helped me when she found that I was in trouble."

"You can imagine, with this kind of dynamic interaction for years, of course my feelings toward her would change. Until at one point, I started to think, 'Yeah, this is the woman that I want to spend all of my life with.'"

Aldrey chuckled.

"So who was the first one to confess love?" Aldrian asked.

Aldrey looked at Aldrian, and with a proud expression, he pointed at himself.

"Of course, it was me."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows and smiled. "You are so proud about it?"

"Of course. That means I was much braver than your mother. This kind of thing also became the subject of our rivalry. At that time, I knew your mother's feelings, but she did not say anything about it. I just went all in and confessed my love to her when we met again at the border between our families and the devil territory."

"Well, although my decision to confess was also influenced by the rumor that the First Prince of the Doria Empire at that time was interested in your mother, I still felt like I won this one."

Aldrey then sighed with a smile and looked at the sky again.

"And after that, our journey filled with struggle as secret lovers began, until through the twists of fate we were trapped inside the secret realm within the Everlasting Silent Forest." He then looked at Aldrian.

"Where we were finally united and able to have you, our lucky star," he said emotionally.

Aldrian did not say anything. His father continued while turning his gaze back to the sky.

"The moment you appeared in our lives, I felt that my life was complete, and your mother felt the same. I no longer thought of anything else as more important than you and your mother. I was ready to sacrifice myself if it meant that you and your mother could live comfortably."

"The time inside the secret realm was one of the happiest periods of my life, aside from the time we spent here. Watching you grow from a baby into a toddler and guiding you in cultivation were moments that always filled me with pride and joy."

"My son was truly a genius and different from others. With the commotion you caused at birth, with the appearance of the dragon and phoenix, we already knew that you would be different from other children. We believed that you were meant to become a great person, someone others would look up to. Someone who would grow to be even greater than your parents."

Aldrey then looked at Aldrian with a smile filled with a father's pride.

"And you truly became a great person, someone countless others can only look up to now. You also became the one who made it possible for your mother and me to unite as a family without facing trouble from either of our families or from others. We even have Celestina now."

"I am truly thankful to the heavens that you came into our lives, that you became our son. Sometimes, your mother and I even joke and ask ourselves, did we really deserve to have you as our son? Aren't you too perfect for us to be your parents? What kind of great deed did we do in our past lives to have a son like you?" Aldrey chuckled and released a breath.

"Well, we simply cannot help feeling that way. You are too outstanding to have come purely from our flesh and blood. All those signs, all of your achievements, we know that you are truly different from us, who are far too ordinary."

"Moreover, you matured much faster than other children. You seem to know many things and act on your own. It is as if you are an adult inside a child's body." When Aldrey said this, Aldrian's heart skipped a beat.

However, he kept looking at his father.

Aldrey, who had been staring into Aldrian's eyes, then turned his gaze toward the garden in front of him.

"You know, Aldrian, sometimes in recent years, I have dreams, or perhaps they are visions. In those dreams, I become a different person, living in a different world. In that world, I am also a father, and I have a son."

The moment Aldrian heard this, his heart trembled.

Is this going to be what he already guessed?

"The dreams feel so real that every emotion I experience inside them feels like my own. And in those dreams, I live with my wife and my son, who, strangely enough, feel familiar to me." Aldrey paused slightly as he looked at one of the flowers in the garden.

"It is like my wife in those dreams is your mother, and the son is you. Even though they have different faces and we live different kinds of lives, I am certain that my wife and my son in those dreams are your mother and you."

"When I told your mother about my dreams one time, she told me that she had experienced the same thing. We were truly stunned. We knew that this was not normal, and we knew it was some kind of sign, a sign from the heavens."

Aldrey then looked at Aldrian, smiling.

"As we thought about it carefully, we suddenly realized something and accepted it as a fact. With all those visions, with all of your greatness, with all of your achievements, and with how you have acted all this time, we know that you have your own purpose, one that we have yet to understand."

"Everything you have done feels planned, not merely the result of fortunate events. And we remembered the moment when you showed us your vision of what you experienced in the core region of the Everlasting Silent Forest, when many divine beings prostrated themselves before you. In the end, everything connected."

"It seems our son is a grand character, someone extraordinary in his past life, and across many lives, we are the ones chosen to become his parents."

Aldrey's smile did not fade, but Aldrian's heart was already pounding rapidly at this moment.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1009 - 1009: Heart to Heart 2

[1,523 words]

Aldrian's heart was pounding quickly, and he could not say anything if his parents have already reached that kind of conclusion.

What should he do? Deny it? That would be underestimating his parents' intelligence.

"Father—"

"I don't know what kind of purpose you have in this life or your true origin in your past life, but we are always ready to become the place where you can rest if you are tired. When you need a place to call home, when you look for the warmth of a family, we will always be there for you," Aldrey said.

His expression was warm, just like how a father spoke to his son. He still looked at Aldrian as his most proud son, and not as someone different. Not as someone with a much greater origin.

Aldrian felt deeply touched. He even wanted to cry, but he held it in.

Suddenly, without hesitation, he stood up and faced Aldrey before he kowtowed to him. Aldrey was stunned, but before he could say or do anything, Aldrian had already spoken.

"I am Aldrian Aster. The name that you and mother have given to me. I am your son, and that is what I will always be. You and mother are my parents and always will be. Even if I have a great origin in my past life, you two are my parents, and my family I will always return to."

"Even if I become the strongest being, you are always my parents, the ones I will continue to call father and mother. The ones who gave me the warmth of a family, the ones who gave me the warmth of parents' love toward their child, the ones who raised me since I was a baby and taught me how to live."

"You are part of my existence. I will never abandon our bond. I will never sever our connection."

"Father and mother, my parents across many lives. Once parents, always parents, until the end."

Aldrey's eyes watered upon hearing Aldrian's declaration. He wiped them quickly with his hand, as he did not want Aldrian to see him cry.

One of the things that he and Irene worried about the most was how Aldrian viewed them, what he truly thought of them. They regarded him as their child, as their son, but could the same be said about Aldrian's feelings toward them?

He was too great to be their son. They felt as though they were only meant to be a single chapter in Aldrian's life before he left them behind. He would become a great figure in the future, and he might forget their existence.

If that happened, then what was the meaning of their bond all this time? What was the meaning of all the interactions filled with familial love between them?

Was this bond only one-sided, with them considering Aldrian as their child, while Aldrian did not consider them as family in a deeper sense?

Was everything Aldrian had done for them merely his way of fulfilling an obligation, as someone who happened to be born from Irene's womb, without any deeper bond?

Both he and Irene knew that there was nothing they could do if Aldrian truly became a person like that.

They did not know his true origin in his past life, and with how extraordinary Aldrian was in this life, they understood that his purpose might be far greater than simply maintaining a family bond.

In the end, they could only be glad that they were able to become a small part of Aldrian's life.

If Aldrian truly left them behind in the future, no longer considering them as his parents, then so be it.

At least they had already done their best in their role as Aldrian's parents, giving him all the love they could.

That was why hearing Aldrian's declaration, filled with unwavering conviction, truly brought him peace of mind.

Aldrian genuinely considered them as his parents in a much deeper sense, not merely as those who gave life to him.

He did not see them as a small fragment of his life, but as part of his very existence, always within his identity and never separated from it.

He regarded them as his family, and as the place he called home.

He proudly declared that he was their son, and that they were his father and mother.

"Stand up, son. I have already heard enough," Aldrey said, which Aldrian obeyed. He stood up and then sat down again beside Aldrey.

Aldrey wiped his eyes one last time before taking a deep breath.

"Ouff, tonight is really quite different. How could there be dirty air in this place? It makes my eyes water," he said, which made Aldrian smile.

Seeing Aldrian's smile, Aldrey knew that his words sounded ridiculous, but he did not care. He smiled as well and then looked at the night sky again.

"Father, I am really sorry for never being more open with you or mother, for making you and mother always worry about me, for making you and mother feel left out," Aldrian said.

"Ah, that is alright. I know you have your own reasons, and I believe this is for our own good. As long as you are alright, that is what matters the most," Aldrey replied.

Aldrian released a sigh upon hearing his father's reply. Even after accepting the fact that he had an extraordinary origin in his past life and hidden matters surrounding him, his father did not expect anything other than his well-being. He did not care about secrets or mysteries. Just knowing that his son was healthy was enough for him.

"Well, Father, I want to talk to you about it now. I don't want to make you or mother feel left out, and this is also a good chance for Father to know more about what truly happened," Aldrian said.

Aldrey raised his eyebrows before smiling.

"Well then, I am listening."

Aldrian nodded, and finally began to narrate everything, starting from the very first time he experienced many dreams that were once thought to be nightmares in the past. Of course, Aldrian did not tell his father about the system or all of his capabilities.

He spoke about when he received a vision upon seeing Long Shentian's bones, which made him decide to leave the secret realm without waiting for them.

He also talked about his visions regarding his past life as a great emperor, and how he lived in that life as a supreme being.

How he lived among gods and was worshiped by them. Aldrian also explained that he was still not completely sure about his true origin and was still searching the truth behind it.

He also spoke about the fate of the universe after he left, and the current situation.

He explained why he needed to do all the things his father had seen him do all this time, which made Aldrey understand why he had to do so much.

Why he could enter places that no one else could enter, such as the core region of the Everlasting Silent Forest in the past, and many other places.

Why he seemed to hunt down devils in so many locations. Why he fought them, no matter how great the number of devils was.

By the time Aldrey finished listening to Aldrian's story, he was truly astonished and left speechless.

His son had been that great in his past life? Yet, he also bore an enormous burden on his shoulders, that of saving the entire universe from the invaders.

That realization made him feel heavy-hearted, but upon hearing that his son had chosen this path willingly, and that he accepted it without regret, Aldrey did not say anything against it.

It was true that if those invaders succeeded in their plan, then they might as well be dead.

If all those gods and countless other beings had placed their hope in his son and believed in him, then as his father, he too must believe in him.

As his father, he would always support him.

He resolved to watch his son's back, so that Aldrian could continue moving forward without worrying about what lay behind him.

"I see. Well, everything makes sense now," Aldrey said as he released a deep sigh and looked at Aldrian.

"Your road ahead might be full of challenges, but I will continue to support you. Your mother must think the same as well. I will tell her what you have just told me, and she will surely be happy that you finally chose to share your secret with us," he added.

Aldrian smiled. "Thank you, Father."

Aldrey smiled as well and looked toward the eastern horizon, where the sunlight had already begun to chase away the darkness of the night sky.

"To think that we talked for this long, time surely passes quickly," he said as he stood up and stretched his body.

"Uhf, well then, I will go to your mother first. She must still be thinking about what happened yesterday," Aldrey said with a smile before leaving Aldrian and entering the palace.

Aldrian smiled as he watched his father's figure disappear. He then looked toward the sun that had begun to peek over the horizon.

He truly felt good and refreshed now, after finally being able to open up about some of his secrets to his family.

It was as if a weight had unknowingly disappeared from his heart.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1010 - 1010: Different Ending

[1,529 words]

For the rest of the day, Aldrian did his usual business as the emperor, but he also visited a few places to inform them that he would be gone for some time. He had already decided to depart for the Central Region of Heaven the day after tomorrow, so he needed to manage several matters before he left.

He needed to give notes to Xin Haotian about what had to be done while he was gone and what he hoped the Divine Vanguard Knight Order would become when he returned in the future.

He also needed to inform the Xin Family patriarch, as well as all the leaders of the major territories.

Although he would leave one of his avatars behind, it was still only an avatar. There were still limitations compared to his real body.

However, Aldrian was not too worried, as Ao Tianhai would also stay behind to guard his home. Even though Ao Tianhai wanted to follow him, Aldrian ordered him to remain and protect his family.

He gave Ao Tianhai convincing words, saying that he entrusted this task to him because he was the most capable one here, and that this duty was just as important as following him, since he would be guarding his family and their home.

He, of course, told his family. Although they felt sad that he would be leaving again, and that this journey might take a long time, they did not dwell on it too much.

They already understood his circumstances, and they would support him in doing what he believed was right.

Later, when night came, he satisfied his wives with pleasure separately. First was Sylphia, and after leaving her faint with a satisfied expression, he went to Baek Jimin, who soon experienced the same.

Because he would be gone for a while, they truly did their best to give him the best service, and he truly liked it, which made him more vigorous this night. He gave them pleasure and a satisfying experience as if they had sex for days, and they would not forget the sensation of his body for a long time.

On the next day, when the time reached midday, all of Aldrian's family gathered in the dining room. In front of them were many dishes that had already been prepared by Irene with the help of Sylphia, Baek Jimin, and Angelica.

This was truly a special occasion, as they had never gathered with all family members present in the dining room before.

As cultivators with quite high cultivation levels, eating was no longer a primary activity for them. They had already reached a point where it was no longer essential for survival.

They only ate to savor the taste or to support their cultivation, but even without eating, they would not die. At their level, the heaven and earth energy was enough to replace the role of food and drink.

For this special occasion, Irene decided to gather all of them to eat together and create beautiful memories before Aldrian's departure.

For Baek Jimin and Angelica, this was the first time they truly helped someone prepare dishes. As for Sylphia, because she liked to adventure in the past, she had more experience cooking by herself.

Fortunately, Baek Jimin and Angelica were quick learners, and they truly had talent for cooking, which made the final results satisfying.

Aldrian was truly surprised by the results of their cooking because of how good the food was, and it made them happy. He had already tasted Sylphia's cooking in the past, so he was not surprised by her cooking, even more so by his mother's.

In his opinion, his mother was still the best, as the taste from his childhood was still the same.

The atmosphere in the dining room was full of happiness. Aldrian's parents, Celestina, Elaine, his harem, all of them interacted with each other. Even Sylvia also joined them.

Ao Tianhai, who initially did not want to disturb them, finally also joined after Irene asked him to. If Zander, Aurelia, and Reiss were here, they would likely have joined as well.

However, Zander was on another continent, adventuring in many places and gaining experience, while Aurelia and Reiss had been in seclusion since last year.

Today was family time for Aldrian, and he was truly happy. He was surrounded by the people he loved and who loved him. He looked at his family with warm feelings, and this further strengthened his determination.

He would do anything to make this sight in front of him continue repeating in the future. He would make sure that there would be no threat looming over them, and at this moment, the invaders were the most obvious threat.

After the feast, Aldrian spent his time with his harem, taking a stroll with them in several places across the continent. Although they had lived all their lives on the Barisan Continent, there were still many places they could visit for the first time and enjoy together.

This showed how vast the continent was. If a normal mortal without cultivation tried to explore the entire continent without using any special means, they would never be able to cover it all in their lifetime.

From snowy environments to deserts, from lush regions filled with greenery to barren lands, all of them could be found within the Barisan Continent.

Aldrian and his harem simply passed their time together until night came before returning to the palace.

When they arrived at the palace, Sylphia and Baek Jimin suddenly ran off, leaving Aldrian and Angelica alone. Aldrian could only smile at their antics, then looked at Angelica, who flushed shyly now that it was only the two of them.

Without hesitation, he took her hand and brought her to stroll through the garden. Under the beautiful moonlight, surrounded by the garden filled with various flowers, the two figures created a romantic sight.

Angelica slowly grew used to it, and her shyness gradually faded, replaced by a smile full of love. Her gaze toward him each time she glanced at him showed just how much she loved him.

"In the past, when I had not yet met you, I never could have imagined that I would experience this kind of thing. Walking under the moonlight, seeing its beauty, and feeling love in my heart. At that time, I was only trying to contend with the way I lived with Father," Angelica said, her gaze lifting toward the night sky.

"However, I truly feel thankful to the heavens that you came to me and bring me out of that condition. If not for you, I would never have known the kind of life I would have missed had I remained blind and crippled."

"I am truly thankful that in my past lives, it was you who always came to me and accompanied me until the end of each life."

"I am glad that you are the man I have fallen in love with. Well, maybe I should thank my earliest past life for falling in love with you?" Both she and Aldrian giggled as they continued walking hand in hand.

"Well, I might as well thank my past life too, for being able to meet you and fall in love with you," Aldrian said.

There was a moment of silence between them before Angelica stopped her steps, which prompted Aldrian to stop as well.

"Be careful out there, dear. I hope you succeed on your journey," Angelica said, her gaze fixed directly on his eyes.

Aldrian smiled warmly, brought her hand to his lips, and kissed it.

"I will. I still need to marry you after I get back anyway. How could I not be careful? How could I disappoint the person I love?" he said before trying to walk again while still holding her hand.

However, he could feel her body stiffen and she did not move. He smiled inwardly and looked at her as if he were oblivious.

"What happened, my dear? Is there something wrong?" he asked.

At that moment, her face showed astonishment, but then her grip on his hand tightened.

"Could you repeat what you just said?" she asked.

Aldrian smiled innocently. "Which one? I think I said many things just now."

"Just now, after I said 'be careful' to you."

"Uhhh... what was it? I think I already forgot," Aldrian said, putting on a confused expression. This finally made Angelica's face show a slight sulk, the first time he had ever seen it.

"Aldrian!" she shouted.

"Ahahaha," Aldrian burst out laughing, which only made Angelica sulk even more. Then he kissed her hand again and suddenly pulled her closer, wrapping an arm around her waist, which caught her by surprise.

With a smile on his face, he looked directly into her eyes, one of his hands gently stroking her cheek.

"I will marry you after I finish the matters in the Central Region of Heaven. How could I make the person I love keep waiting? I want to give you happiness as a husband in this life. However, this time, we will have a good ending, not like the dreams you had in the past."

"I will make sure that you have a happy life filled with love, the happy ending you deserve after all the things you experienced in our past lives," he said in a tone full of love.

Angelica's eyes watered as Aldrian leaned his forehead against hers.

"I love you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1011 - 1011: Visiting the Prisoner

[1,552 words]

"I love you," Aldrian said, his voice soft and full of affection.

A tear finally fell from Angelica's eyes. She kept looking into his eyes despite her vision blurring because of the tears. She closed her mouth with one of her hands for a moment before she showed a smile that had already formed on her lips.

"I love you too," she replied.

Aldrian's smile grew brighter, and without hesitation, he kissed her lips. As their lips met, she closed her eyes and savored the warm feeling of their lips touching.

As time passed, the kiss that was full of soft warmth slowly changed into one filled with burning affection. Their closed lips began to open, and Aldrian was the one who initiated it. He parted Angelica's lips, and she cooperated with him.

She slowly opened her lips, and finally Aldrian's tongue could explore her mouth. This was the first time his tongue explored her mouth. For Angelica, who was experiencing her mouth being explored by the opposite sex for the first time, she truly felt shy, but she endured it.

She kept following his guidance as his tongue continued to dance with hers. Because she was still inexperienced, she could only be passive and let him guide her.

Sometimes she tried to do what he taught her by attempting to enter his mouth. Aldrian also allowed her to do so, giving her the chance to gain experience.

After a few minutes of deep kissing, their lips finally separated. Aldrian smiled at her, and Angelica also smiled back at him with a flushed face. They did not say anything and simply leaned their foreheads against each other, closing their eyes while enjoying each other's company.

He kept hugging her waist while she placed her hands on his shoulders. One was a handsome man without equal, and the other was a beautiful woman like an angel. The sight was truly romantic and beautiful.

As they were still enjoying the moment together, Aldrian opened his eyes and glanced to the side. He smiled as he sensed two presences that had been there for some time, hiding behind one of the lush bushes.

Aldrian had not reacted to their presence earlier and continued to maintain his position. Only after more than a minute did he grab Angelica's hand and start to walk.

"I want to bring you to see two cute, sneaky bunnies," he said.

Angelica raised her eyebrows. Bunnies in the palace grounds? She had never seen any bunnies in this place. How could there be bunnies here?

Aldrian walked toward the direction of the two presences, and he could sense that the moment he and Angelica moved toward them, the two presences tried to escape.

However, Aldrian did not allow them to do so, as he made them stay still in their place.

After reaching the bush where the two presences were hiding, Aldrian finally released them.

At that moment, the two presences were thrown out from the bush and fell in front of him.

Angelica was stunned, then astonished.

"Sister Sylphia, Sister Jimin," she said as she saw Sylphia and Baek Jimin wearing sheepish smiles.

At that moment, she finally understood that they had been watching her and Aldrian from earlier!

Her face flushed, and she truly felt like she wanted to bury herself. They had been watching how she and Aldrian kissed deeply and how they savored each other's lips.

"Hehehe." Sylphia and Baek Jimin chuckled. They quickly stood up and looked at Aldrian and Angelica with teasing expressions, which made Angelica's face turn even redder, like a tomato.

"Are the two bunnies enjoying the sight while your sister here is too shy?" Aldrian asked as Angelica had already hidden her face behind his back.

"Well, we were truly curious and just wanted to see what you and Sister Angelica would do, and we were not disappointed," Sylphia said, then looked at Angelica.

"Congratulations, Sister Angelica. This scoundrel finally said those three words to you."

Angelica, who was still hiding behind Aldrian, finally dared to show herself and stand beside him. Her face was still flushed, but she looked happy as she nodded with a smile.

"Uhm."

Suddenly, Baek Jimin grabbed Angelica's arm. "Let's go. It's girls' time again. There are many things we can discuss after this," she said.

Sylphia also grabbed Angelica's other arm and smiled at her. "That's true. Let's leave this man for now. I bet that since he will depart tomorrow, he will do something other than taking care of you. How cruel of him."

"No, I—" Angelica wanted to say something, but Baek Jimin and Sylphia had already dragged her away with them. Angelica could only glance back at Aldrian as she was being pulled along.

Aldrian, who could not say anything, could only smile at his wives' antics. He truly liked this sight, seeing his three beauties in harmony and full of sisterhood.

He kept looking at them as they entered the palace before he turned to look at the sky. What Sylphia said was actually not wrong. There was something he needed to do at this moment, before he departed tomorrow.

In a place shrouded in darkness, a man sat with his back leaning against the hard wall behind him. He was completely naked, without a single piece of cloth covering his body. His hands and feet were chained to the wall with fairly long chains, which still allowed him to perform some basic movements.

He lowered his head and did not move even a little, remaining completely silent. The atmosphere was eerily still, as if the place itself was protected by some kind of soundproof barrier that isolated it from both the inside and the outside.

Amidst the stillness, the sound of footsteps suddenly echoed throughout the place. The moment the footsteps could be heard, the area that had been completely shrouded in darkness was faintly lit by torches.

The man was actually inside a cell.

Step, Step, Step.

Despite the echoing footsteps, the man did not seem to care and remained unmoving.

After a moment, the shadow of a man from outside the cell fell over his figure. The man outside the cell was none other than Aldrian, and the man inside was the Vampire King.

Aldrian observed the Vampire King for a moment before he entered the cell. The cracking sound of the cell door opening resounded as Aldrian approached him.

The Vampire King finally lifted his head and looked toward Aldrian, who was now standing in front of him. Aldrian's blue eyes shone in the dim cell, devoid of any expression. It was a stark contrast to the moment when he was in front of his harem.

The Vampire King gritted his teeth and suddenly tried to attack Aldrian, swinging both of his hands toward him. However, the length of the chains prevented him from reaching Aldrian. His expression twisted in anger.

"Arghhh, you bastard! I fucking curse you! I fucking curse you! Our god will crush you! You will die a horrible death!" he shouted. His voice echoed throughout the dungeon.

Aldrian's expression did not change in the slightest despite the Vampire King's crazed outburst. Instead, he calmly took out a simple chair from his storage ring and sat down, facing the Vampire King.

"You made a big mistake by killing many of my troops and trapping me here. Our god will make—"

"I know Tarius already senses the loss of many of his followers in the First Heaven, and I don't doubt that he might do something about it. I can imagine that he might go crazy," Aldrian cut him off, causing the Vampire King stunned.

The Vampire King's expression then turned furious.

"Don't call our god's name with your filthy mouth! How dare a mortal stain his name with your lowly life—!"

But then he finally realized something, and it left him stunned.

"Wait. How did you know our god?"

Aldrian did not answer, but the Vampire King began thinking about all the strangeness surrounding Aldrian.

If Aldrian came from the First Heaven, then there was no way he could know the name Tarius. Did Aldrian come from the higher heavens?

But how could that be possible when the path to the lower heavens was already completely occupied by their forces?

If someone from the higher heavens wanted to descend to the lower heavens, they would always appear in the central region of heaven.

This was different from ascension, where cultivators could appear anywhere across the higher heavens.

Moreover, it was impossible for anyone not authorized by the higher-ups of their forces in the higher heavens to pass through the current central region of heaven.

They had already placed it under full control.

'Or is he from the rebel gods' forces? Did they do something behind our god's back?' the Vampire King suddenly thought.

'Is he an apostle?'

That was the only plausible explanation for why Aldrian seemed so out of this world. His strength, as well as his knowledge about their god, could only come from the gods on the rebel side.

If that was the case, then he might know why he was not killed and was instead brought here.

"You will not get anything from me! Even if you try to look into my memories, you will not succeed," the Vampire King said with a crazed grin.

Aldrian, who had shown no reaction until now, leaned his body forward and finally revealed a smile.

A smile that reminded the Vampire King of the moment before the supernova.

A smile that brought a terrible premonition.

"Is that so? Then let's see if what you just said is true," Aldrian said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1012 - 1012: I Could Show You My Monster Side

[1,584 words]

For the vampire king who had already lived for more than a million years, there was nothing that could faze him in the First Heaven. He had experienced countless things, to the point that most of what existed in the First Heaven no longer gave him any surprise.

As the lowest of the heavens, this place was far more boring and did not offer much that could attract him. The only things that could draw his interest were clues or remnants left behind by those he and his forces called the rebel gods.

These were the gods who had rebelled against the forces occupying this universe, forming a resistance that still existed even now.

Despite their numbers being far smaller, they were still able to oppose his forces, which showed just how powerful those rebels truly were. They had already become a major obstacle to his force's conquest of the entire universe for eons.

That was why, besides spreading his god's influence, his mission also included hunting down any of those rebels or their followers, should any exist within the First Heaven.

Although he had never seen any gods, nor fought them directly, he had already prepared himself in case he had to face them or their followers. Under the law of causality within the First Heaven, their cultivation would be equal to his, so he believed he had a chance to face them.

He had already killed many of their followers in the Second Heaven, so killing them again, or even eliminating gods hiding within the First Heaven, might be possible.

Killing a god would be a great achievement and would surely make his god proud.

But before he could meet any of them in the First Heaven, for the first time, he encountered someone who could make his heart tremble in this realm.

In the short time he had observed this man, the man had already shown him things that completely overturned his understanding of cultivation.

From creating black holes to this moment, when he had actually succeeded in infiltrating his mind and observing his memories.

He could not understand how his mind could be so easily breached when it had already been planted with a powerful curse against anyone who tried to peek into his memories.

A strong curse that had been planted by his god.

A curse so powerful that it would instantly trap the consciousness of anyone who attempted to look into his memories. The curse also targeted the soul, ensuring the death of the infiltrator.

However, the man in front of him had easily broken through the curse and casually looked into his memories.

Could an apostle truly be this overwhelmingly strong?

There was nothing that could stop the man before him. He was far more powerful than he was, as could be seen from how he controlled black holes. A divine curse had also failed to affect him, as he had simply bypassed it with ease.

He had never seen an apostle of a god before, so he did not know what they were truly capable of.

He had only heard that they were special individuals who received many blessings from the gods, and that they were far stronger than any cultivators within the same realm.

Special people who could bear the direct blessings of the gods and wield their power.

But at this moment, he began to doubt whether an apostle could truly accomplish what the man in front of him had done.

If any apostle were as strong as this man, then the universe should have already fallen into their god's hands long ago.

As Aldrian looked through his memories, the vampire king still conscious, yet he could not control his body. He could feel Aldrian probing into his memories, but he was powerless to stop it.

He wanted to fight, but his body did not obey his commands and only spasmed as his eyes rolled back. He felt intense pain within his brain and desperately wanted to touch his head to ease it.

Aldrian continued to look through the vampire king's memories, showing no concern for his well-being as he casually observed countless fragments of his past without restraint.

After more than six hours of torture for the vampire king, Aldrian finally finished his observation and released him. His body slumped to the ground as he breathed heavily,

sweat already soaking his entire body. His eyes were bloodshot, and blood flowed from his orifices. His body also convulsed slightly from the aftereffects of hours of torment.

Aldrian looked at the vampire king and nodded.

"As expected from an immortal, moreover an immortal at Immortal Saint stage, your soul and mind are truly strong to endure for that long," he said. He knew that despite the vampire king's condition, he could still hear him.

The vampire king finally regained some of his strength and lifted his head to look at Aldrian. For the first time, a feeling he had not experienced in a very long time surfaced within his mind.

Fear.

His gaze trembled as he moved his lips. "Who are you? What are you?" he asked with a trembling voice.

Aldrian smiled and tapped the vampire king's cheek three times. "This expression of yours is the same one every devil I have caught in the past made. The expression of fear and despair."

"After everything you have done in your life, becoming a follower of those invaders and acting however you pleased, seeing you like this brings me satisfaction and draws out my inner sadistic side. I enjoy watching all of your pain and desperation."

"Fate has brought you to me, and I can deliver the karma for everything you have done in the past."

The vampire king's heart trembled as he looked at Aldrian's smile, one that was truly chilling.

"Monster," he said without much thought. "The followers of our god across the First Heaven will come for you after this."

Aldrian grinned.

"Let them come. It will be much easier for me to annihilate them without having to travel to countless places across the First Heaven. I want to see your god's face when I obliterate all of his followers here."

"And for you to call me a monster? That is rich, coming from you. After looking into your memories and knowing what kind of man you are, I don't think you have the right to say that."

"But I could show you my monster side right now."

Aldrian then looked at the vampire king's fangs, clearly protruding from his upper lip.

Aldrian trapped the vampire king's body in a spatial lock, preventing it from moving. He then pinched one of the fangs and shook it, causing the vampire king's head to follow the motion.

"Ngh," the vampire king groaned.

"The number of lives taken by this fang is already countless. I wonder if I should start with this?" Aldrian said menacingly, causing the vampire king's fear to intensify.

"Or maybe your hands? Or your feet? Or maybe—" Aldrian's gaze shifted toward the vampire king's crotch, which made him frantically try to move his body.

"No, no..." he said, but the spatial lock kept him firmly in place. He could only move his head and lips.

Aldrian's grin grew more sinister. "Come on, countless women have already fallen prey to that dick of yours. Isn't it only right for this little fella to receive its karma as well?"

"Aghhhh!" the vampire king shouted in desperation, trying to escape, but Aldrian finally sealed even his head and lips. He could no longer move at all.

"Sh, sh, sh. Don't break down yet. We still have a few hours before sunrise. Until then, just enjoy my treatment," Aldrian said as he returned to pinching one of the vampire king's fangs.

Without hesitation, he tore it out.

"Nnghhh!" The vampire king wanted to scream, but his lips would not open. Blood flowed from his upper lip.

Aldrian then grasped the vampire king's remaining fang and pulled it out as well. Once again, the vampire king tried to scream, but only a muffled groan escaped his throat.

In the dim dungeon, the sound of groaning filled with pain echoed throughout the space. At times, the vampire king's screams could be heard before they faded back into hoarse groans. These sounds of agony lasted until the sun rose a few hours later.

When sunrise came, Aldrian stopped and looked at the vampire king's horrific condition. He had already lost all of his limbs, and his eyes were gone. Beneath his body lay a pool of blood.

Scattered around the dungeon were countless severed limbs and dicks.

This is the usual Aldrian's torture method. He would cut off the limbs, then regrow them quickly using his golden energy, only to cut them off again. He repeated the process until he felt satisfied.

Now that the sun had risen, he decided it was enough. The vampire king was already on the brink of death, his body completely motionless even though he was still breathing.

Without thinking much, Aldrian used his death laws. Black energy flowed out from his palm before shaping itself into flames. He dropped the black fire onto the vampire king's body and the severed remains around him.

They were quickly consumed by the black flames and turned to ashes.

Even the ashes themselves soon vanished, completely engulfed by the fire.

Aldrian made sure to burn the vampire king's soul as well, ensuring that he would not reincarnate.

After Aldrian was done, he retracted the flames and left the dungeon. He did not leave behind a single trace of the vampire king.

As he stepped out of the dungeon, he looked toward the eastern horizon, where the sun had already begun to rise.

He needed to prepare.

Today was the day he would depart for the central region of the heaven.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1013 - 1013: Sending More Reinforcements

[1,519 words]

In a far place from the First Heaven, a group of shadows gathered inside a realm filled with white color. There were ten of them, forming a circular shape as they stood in place.

The ten shadows did not have clear shapes, but those who saw them would instinctively understand that there were living beings behind those shadows.

"Why did you suddenly call for an emergency meeting, Tarius?" one of the shadows asked. The voice did not reveal whether it belonged to a man or a woman.

"Don't tell me something is wrong with our mission. Are you still unable to deal with the problem that appeared in the First Heaven?" another shadow asked. The voice sounded the same as the first.

"It must be so. He was given the First Heaven, the lowest and weakest heaven, yet he still has not conquered all of it after all this time. Just as I thought, giving him one part of the universe was a bad idea," another shadow commented.

One of the shadows, Tarius, gritted his teeth, but he did not lash out. Instead, he calmed himself.

"I will not hide the fact that something is wrong with the mission, and I believe what just happened in the First Heaven is already dire in my eyes," he said, causing the others to focus their attention on him.

This was the first time they had seen Tarius refrain from lashing out after being mocked by the others. This made them realize that the situation might truly be different this time, as Tarius was able to restrain his anger. They knew what kind of temperament Tarius had, and for him to suppress his anger was something extraordinary.

Whatever the reason for calling this emergency meeting, it was serious.

"What happened in the First Heaven? Did that unexpected variable do something?" another shadow asked.

"Not long ago, I lost more than a trillion of my followers. Some of them were immortals, and just now, I lost one of the four commanders at the Immortal Saint realm whom I ordered to oversee the First Heaven."

"I could also sense that the Anathema laws I placed inside that commander were erased before his life was taken, which means that whoever killed that commander could read his memories."

"When I tried to peek at what happened, I could not see anything, just like in the past when I tried to peer into certain events. All of them were always related to that strange man." Tarius stopped speaking, causing the others to fall silent.

"Yes, there is no other explanation. That unexpected variable must be a god. A living god in the First Heaven. There is no way he was merely an apostle with that kind of power," one of the earlier shadows commented.

"I agree. Then it looks like some of those rebels successfully hid in the First Heaven before we occupied the First Heaven's central region of heaven," another chimed in.

"If that is the case, then it makes sense. With a god's knowledge and power, they could obliterate many of Tarius' followers. They might also possess an artifact capable of blocking the observation of other gods who have already reached the realm of Master of Universe like us," another one said.

The rest also agreed.

"Your Excellency, what do you think?" one of the shadows asked toward the shadow that had remained silent until this moment.

The others also fell silent as they waited for that shadow to speak. This lone shadow stood slightly farther away from the rest.

"Send five God Sovereign stage cultivators to the First Heaven and prepare one God Transcendence to remain on standby, just in case," the shadow finally said.

"Also send many more immortals at the Immortal Saint realm to the First Heaven. Have them hunt that unknown variable. They must buy time until the gods descend to the First Heaven."

"We need to handle this problem firmly and swiftly before we lose the entire First Heaven to that unknown variable. The success of the mission is the most important."

The others were stunned.

Sending five God Sovereign stage cultivators and preparing one God Transcendence?

That figure clearly regarded this matter with extreme seriousness. With five God Sovereign stage cultivators, the problem in the First Heaven might already be resolved.

But preparing a God Transcendence stage cultivator as well? Was that not excessive?

For them to send five God Sovereign stage cultivators to the First Heaven, they would need a considerable amount of time to open a portal to the First Heaven's central region of heaven.

This was different from sending immortals.

What they would be sending were real gods.

The laws of causality in the First Heaven were far stricter toward gods, especially since they were not from this universe. They needed some time to weaken those laws to the point where they could send gods there, even though the gods would arrive in a sealed state.

However, they did not voice their opinions and simply answered the figure.

"Yes, Your Excellency."

They then discussed briefly what needed to be done. Soon after, the nine shadows disappeared, leaving behind the last lone shadow. The lone shadow seemed to be thinking about something before the figure also vanished, leaving the white realm completely empty once more.

A few hours after Aldrian got out of the dungeon, he stood in front of his family in the palace garden, ready to depart.

"Be careful, son. If it is too dangerous, please come back. You can take a step back and try again later," Irene said with a smile. She had already heard everything from Aldrey about what he and Aldrian talked about that night.

"I will, Mother," Aldrian replied with a smile. He then looked at Celestina in her arms. She was looking at him with a happy expression as she stretched her hands toward him, wanting to be picked up.

Aldrian smiled and stroked her head.

"Son, be careful out there," Aldrey said. Aldrian responded with a nod as he looked at his father.

"Dear, I hope you succeed, and you have to come back to us," Sylphia said.

"Yes, you must come back to us. If something happens to you, I will look for you and follow you until I find you," Baek Jimin said.

"Dear, please be careful in everything," Angelica also said, which made Aldrian smile at them. He then hugged the three of them at the same time and kissed each of their foreheads.

They felt shy, but they were still smiling.

Aldrian released them and then looked to the side where Eleine and Ao Tianhai were standing.

"Young Master, I hope you succeed," Eleine said with a slight bow.

Aldrian nodded. "Thank you, Eleine." He then looked at Ao Tianhai.

"Tianhai, I leave my family's safety to you."

"I will guard them with my life, and I will not disappoint you, Your Majesty!" Ao Tianhai replied firmly.

The others who witnessed Ao Tianhai's behavior still found the scene strange. After learning that he was a real god, a divine being from the higher heavens, their respect toward him naturally deepened.

But seeing that divine being act submissively in front of Aldrian, they once again felt Aldrian's past greatness. The man who, at this moment, was their son, their husband, their family.

Aldrian nodded and looked at the others one last time with a smile.

"Then I'll depart."

He then disappeared, leaving his family staring at the place where he had stood, their expressions filled with hope. They hoped that he would succeed and return to them.

Aldrian appeared on the central continent, specifically in an underground location where a teleportation gate leading to the central region of heaven was located. This was the place where he had once met the will of the Heavenly Demon's son.

The moment he appeared, Sect Master Han was already waiting for him, as Aldrian had informed him of his departure beforehand.

This place was still controlled by the three great sects, so no one could enter it casually. There were a few guards outside, ensuring that no one dared to try their luck and enter this place.

"Your Majesty," Sect Master Han greeted Aldrian.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. "To think that Sect Master Han is personally here to greet me. I am truly flattered."

"Aish, there is no need for such words, Your Majesty. I am merely making sure that everything is in order here," Sect Master Han replied with a smile.

They then walked toward the hall where the teleportation gate was located.

After they arrived, Aldrian stood in front of it and observed it for a moment.

He took a deep breath.

Despite the warning from the Heavenly Demon's son, he decided to use the teleportation gate.

With his plan to reach the central region of heaven as quickly as possible, there was no other way than this teleportation gate. Although this method might be truly dangerous, since he did not know the condition of the other gate, he still decided to bet on it.

If what he feared the most happened, he had already prepared for it.

He stood on the formation in front of the teleportation gate and finally injected his energy into it. The energy required to activate the teleportation was immense, and only after more than five seconds of continuously injecting his energy did the teleportation gate finally activate.

Zumm!

A portal to the other side appeared.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[1,676 words]

The portal appeared in the teleportation gate with a distortion of space.

Aldrian took a deep breath.

'I hope that the moment I step into this portal, I can instantly step to the other side. But if not...!' Aldrian touched something beneath his sleeve. He looked at it for a moment before turning to Sect Master Han and smiling.

"See you next time, Sect Master," he said.

"Have a safe journey, Your Majesty. May you succeed in your matters there." Sect Master Han replied with a slight bow.

Aldrian nodded, looked at the portal again, then took another deep breath.

'The moment of truth.'

He then stepped into the portal, and his body disappeared from Sect Master Han's sight.

The moment Aldrian entered the portal, he suddenly felt a spatial disturbance, causing his eyes to widen. He knew that despite never having used the teleportation gate before, this kind of disturbance should not exist.

The only reasonable explanation for this disturbance was that what he feared the most had happened.

'Shit!' In a rare moment, Aldrian cursed in his mind as he grasped a talisman beneath his sleeve and crushed it. A split second later, a protective spatial barrier appeared around him, and he also activated his own spatial barrier as a second layer of protection.

All of this happened in under two seconds when Aldrian suddenly felt his body being sucked into the void, and turbulent spatial storms swept over him. He completely fell into darkness, and the spatial storm was truly powerful.

The spatial barrier that could even protect him from the attacks of immortals started to crack. This was a protective talisman he had taken from the treasures Xuanji left for him. The protective talisman that could even defend against an immortal saint stage cultivator actually cracked!

Aldrian bit his lips as he was trapped in the void filled with violent spatial storms. The power of the spatial storm was enough to make even the strongest immortals flee with all their might, a power that could shred them to pieces.

Not even two seconds later, the barrier from the talisman shattered!

Before the barrier shattered, Aldrian quickly crushed another identical talisman, protecting himself once again. If he did not have the talismans left by Xuanji, he would have died.

Aldrian then took out another talisman and looked at it solemnly. This was another talisman from Xuanji, an escape talisman. He truly did not want to use this method, as his chance of getting out alive from this chaotic space was only fifty-fifty.

But he knew that if he did nothing, he would die here.

He gritted his teeth before crushing the talisman. Suddenly, his body disappeared, and Aldrian felt himself moving at an incredible speed for a few seconds. During those moments, he could not move his body at all due to the overwhelming force pressing against him.

The barrier from the talisman collapsed once more, and at that moment, he felt sudden pain surge through his body. It was as if countless blades were slashing him, forcing him to grit his teeth.

His own barrier, which he struggled to maintain, could not hold for even a second before collapsing, leaving his body exposed to the external spatial disturbances.

In that split second, he felt his body being shredded and his soul shaken. Blood dripped from his mouth, and the pain intensified.

"AAARRGGHHHH!" he roared as he felt the extreme pain. But he continued creating barriers from his golden energy, protecting his body as much as possible. Each time the barrier shattered, he created it again and again, continuously without stopping.

He continued to struggle, refusing to die in this place! He still had many things to do, and his family was still waiting for him!

But then he felt his consciousness start to fade.

'I need to stay awake, I need to stay awake, I need to—' His vision grew blurrier as darkness slowly encroached upon his sight.

'No, no, I need to stay—' But his sight finally fell into darkness, and his body slowly disappeared from the void. It was unclear whether his body had already been shredded to pieces or had simply vanished from the void.

In an unknown place.

A forest stretched all the way to the horizon, with a clear river splitting it, creating a refreshing sight to behold. Mountains in the near distance further added to the beauty of the scenery.

The beautiful sounds of many kinds of birds could be heard, but they were not the only ones. The cries of wild beasts and spiritual beasts could sometimes also be heard.

This forest was home to many beings.

Among those beings, there was a village built in one part of the forest near the river. The atmosphere looked peaceful and traditional. Tens of simple wooden houses were spread across an area of more than two square kilometers.

At this moment, the villagers were busy with their own activities. Some were farmers tending the rice fields and other plantation fields near the village, which were far more extensive than the village itself. Some were taking care of their livestock, such as cows and sheep.

Inside one of the wooden houses, an old man with short white beard was treating a middle age man's arm as he wrapped bandages around it.

"I think you should look for a new job. This is the third time you have come to me in the past two months," the old man said, then sighed. "Picking herbs in that dangerous mountain, you might die at this rate."

"Ahahaha, if I stop, how could I feed my family? The demand for spiritual herbs keeps increasing, and as long as I hold on and can feed my family, that is enough," the man replied with a smile.

"But those nobles are becoming more outrageous as the days go by," the old man said with a clear tone of anger. "They are the ones who control the market, selling pills and elixirs at expensive prices, yet they keep pushing people like you to work for cheap payments that are not even enough to meet your own needs."

"They keep telling us it is for the greater good and for the cost of war against the devils, as if I would believe that lie!"

"Aish, and then there are the bandits, making our lives even more difficult. They keep extorting us. What are those nobles doing if they cannot even deal with these bandits?" the old man added as he finished the bandage.

"Well, what can we do? We are truly weak compared to them. It is already a good thing for us to stay alive and have something to eat," the man answered in a tone full of resignation, causing the old man to sigh.

In another place, one of the villagers was a little girl around seven years old. She had short black hair and wore plain brown clothes. In her hand was an empty bucket, swinging with every step as she walked toward the river.

After she reached the river, she placed the bucket into the clear, flowing water.

As she filled it, she hummed happily, but then suddenly she saw the flow of water in front of her turn red.

She froze for a moment, then her eyes widened in shock as she noticed a body floating past her, dragged along by the slow current.

"Ah!" she shrieked as she stumbled backward, causing the bucket in her hands to slip and fall.

She kept looking at the body as it continued to drift away for a moment before she ran back toward the village.

After she reached the village, she ran toward one of the houses.

Criek!

"Grandpa, Grandpa!" she shouted after opening the wooden door, startling those inside. The ones inside were the old man and the man he was treating.

The old man frowned, noticing how panicked the little girl sounded, and from her panting, it was clear that she had been running.

"What happened, Ella?" he asked.

"A corpse, Grandpa. I found a corpse in the river."

Both the old man and the man were stunned. The old man frowned again. "A corpse?"

The little girl nodded repeatedly. The old man thought for a moment before looking at the man beside him and nodding. The man also nodded, seeming to share the same thought.

"Lead Grandpa to the corpse," the old man said to the little girl.

The little girl nodded and led the old man and the man outside. She guided them to the river, and once they arrived, she followed the river's flow for a short while before they saw a body floating, dragged along by the current.

Luckily, the flow of the river was slow, so the body had not drifted too far from the spot where the little girl first saw it.

The old man narrowed his eyes and raised his eyebrows.

"That body isn't a corpse yet. It's still breathing," he said. Without hesitation, he jumped into the water and tried to reach the body.

After he reached the body, he dragged it onto the riverbank. The moment he placed the body on land, they could finally see the figure more clearly.

A handsome face greeted them, one that made the two men and the little girl think this was the most handsome man they had ever seen. They even thought that this man might be a noble.

With long, fiery red hair, he truly stood out. From his clothing alone, they could not identify his identity, as his clothes were simple and unlike what nobles usually wore, and they were torn in many places.

However, his condition was truly severe. He had lost his entire right arm and left leg, and his body was covered in deep slashing wounds. It was truly a miracle that he was still alive.

"Is it really okay to save him? Won't this bring us trouble later? From the looks of it, this man seems like a strong cultivator, and he must have just fought someone," the man asked the old man.

The old man frowned. After thinking for a moment, he made his decision.

"I will heal him. I cannot ignore this man after knowing he is still alive. Letting him die does not sit well with me."

The man sighed and nodded. They then brought the unconscious man back to their village.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1015 - 1015: Wake Up

[1,640 words]

Two days later,

An old man was inside one of the rooms in his house, observing the condition of the man he had saved two days ago. The man still had not woken up even after two days.

The man's body had already recovered without any wounds, and the severed limbs had actually grown back!

The old man truly amazed and surprised by the man's rapid recovery.

Although he had helped the man using any available herbs to heal the wounds, the speed of recovery was extraordinary.

A few hours after he had pulled the man out of the river, the man's severed limbs had already grown back, and all the wounds on his body had disappeared.

He knew that none of the herbs he had in his inventory could produce such a recovery speed. He also did not possess anything capable of regrowing severed limbs. Such effects could only be achieved by miracle pills or elixirs, which he did not have.

The only reasonable explanation was that the rapid recovery and regrowth of limbs came from the man's own body.

Even if the man were a pseudo Immortal Establishment stage cultivator, it would still be impossible to reach this level of recovery speed unless he possessed an innate ability to heal wounds or regrow limbs quickly.

This made the old man wonder about the man's identity.

Was he a vampire? But he did not have fangs, nor did he carry the aura of a vampire.

Feeling confused, the old man stopped guessing the man's origin.

As he continued observing the man, a little girl peeked into the room. The old man smiled as he sensed her presence.

"What is it, my dear? Do you want to look at this man?" he asked in a loving tone. He knew that his granddaughter was truly curious about this strange man.

Their village rarely received visitors from outside, aside from bandits, and there had never been a stranger staying here before. That was why she was curious that someone was now staying in their home, even though he was unconscious.

The little girl nodded and entered the room, then stood beside her grandfather.

"Grandpa, why has he not woken up yet?" the little girl asked.

The old man sighed. "I don't know. His body has already recovered, and there is no problem, but he still has not woken up."

The little girl understood and looked at Aldrian again.

"I think he will not wake up today either," the old man said, then stood up and walked out of the room.

The little girl looked at her grandpa and then at the man for a moment before she also left the room, leaving the man alone.

Aldrian, at this moment, fell into a dream. Inside this dream, he could not see anything. There was only darkness.

He floated in the nothingness. There was nothing around him. It was as if he was inside his being's essence, but without a lone star.

It reminded him of that one time when he saw a vision where there was only nothingness, before any existence existed, before it burst into a blinding light that spread existence itself.

However, this time, he felt something different.

He felt lonely. He felt desolate. He felt confused. He felt bored. He felt that he did not know what to do. He felt that he had no purpose. He was just there, simply existing, and nothing more.

Aldrian, who felt this way, felt suffocated. He did not like this feeling. He did not like it at all.

He was someone who lived surrounded by people he loved and who loved him back. He was someone who lived for something, who did everything with purpose.

This place felt like a nightmare to him. He wanted to escape from it. He did not want to feel this way anymore.

He wanted to run away as far as possible from this place. He wanted to leave.

He wanted to scream because of this horrible feeling that encroached upon him.

He did not know how long he had been in this place, but this horrible feeling made him feel as if he had already stayed here for a long time.

As he tried to escape from this place, suddenly, a blinding light burst before him, illuminating his entire vision.

The moment he realized it, he had already opened his eyes.

He gasped for air, panting. Sweat rolled down his face, and he still felt disoriented.

After he finally managed to calm his heart, he realized that he was already in a foreign place. He turned his head left and right, observing his surroundings. He was inside a simple, small room, with sunlight passing through the window and illuminating his body.

He lay on a simple bed, with a blanket covering him. Aldrian then looked at his own body and tried to move it. He could move his hands and his feet without much problem. After finding no issues with his limbs, he sat up and observed the room in more detail.

He then spread his spiritual sense to check his surroundings, and he could sense many presences nearby. The nearest to him were two figures inside the house.

As he extended his spiritual sense to the maximum, he finally understood what kind of place this was. He released a deep sigh of relief, realizing that he was still alive.

He truly did not expect there to be a spatial disturbance within the teleportation gate.

With the teleportation gate being built by higher beings, there was no way it would easily become unstable, even though it had not been activated for a long time.

The only thing that made more sense as to why this happened was just what the Heavenly Demon's son had already worried about.

There was something wrong with the gate on the other side. It might have been damaged or already destroyed entirely. This was also one weakness of teleportation gates that covered great distances, such as those between worlds.

If something happened to the other gate, then there was a chance that those who entered would instead be thrown into the void. Worse still, they might encounter a spatial storm.

He thought he would die in that chaotic spatial storm, but it looked like he had won the bet. The escape talisman from Xuanji had successfully brought him out of the chaotic space.

He truly felt grateful to Xuanji for it.

Now the question was: where was this place? He hoped that he had not been thrown far from the central region of Heaven.

He then sat on the edge of the bed for a moment before standing up. He walked toward the door of the room, which was simply covered by a plain cloth curtain.

He moved the curtain to the side, and he could see an old man and a little girl. The old man had duke stage cultivation and seemed to be pounding something in a small container while sitting, with the little girl observing him from the side.

The old man and the little girl also sensed his movement, so they looked in his direction. They were stunned, but Aldrian showed them a smile.

"Are you the one who saved me, sir?" he asked.

The old man put the pounder stick aside and stood up. "Oh, my granddaughter is the one who found you. I merely brought you here and did some first aid on your body. But I think I did not do much, as your body had already recovered by itself."

Aldrian then looked at the little girl, who was observing him curiously. He smiled at her, which made her blush and lower her head.

"I see. Then it looks like I owe you and your granddaughter. Thank you for saving me," he said, bowing slightly to them.

"Ah, no, sir, please don't mind it. I just did what I could and what I thought was right. It's fate that brought you here," the old man said.

Aldrian smiled at him. "You may call me Aldrian, sir...?"

"My name is Valuk, and my granddaughter is Ella," the old man said, which Aldrian acknowledged with a nod.

"Sir Valuk, and Ella," Aldrian repeated their names. "Still, although you said you did not do much, I am truly grateful that you brought me here, sir. There is a possibility I might have died somewhere if Ella had not found me, or if you had not brought me here. So I still owe you."

Valuk smiled and nodded. "If young master says so, oh may I call you Young Master Aldrian? I just feel it's not polite to call your name directly when you have a higher status than me."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. "You may call me however you feel comfortable, Sir Valuk. But why do you think I have a much higher status than you?"

"Well, despite your young age, your cultivation level is already at the pseudo immortal establishment stage. I think besides noble descendants, there is no one who could achieve that. Also, maybe it's just my feeling, but Young Master, you exude a kind of noble aura," Valuk replied.

Aldrian nodded in understanding and smiled. "Well, I'm just a wanderer from a faraway place, so please don't act too formal with me."

After he said this, suddenly the sound of boiling soup could be heard from the side.

"Ah, would you like something to eat, Young Master? We don't have anything lavish, but I think it will be enough to fill your belly," Valuk offered.

Aldrian smiled. "Thank you very much. If it's not too much trouble, that will be more than enough for me." He thought it would be impolite to decline the offer.

A few moments later, three bowls of simple soup, with pieces of meat and vegetables, were served.

Aldrian took a spoonful and savored the taste.

"This is good, Sir Valuk," he said, which made Valuk and Ella smile, especially Ella, who looked very happy.

"I'm glad you like it, Young Master," Valuk replied, before taking a spoon of soup himself.

"Sir Valuk, if I may ask, where is this place?" Aldrian asked after swallowing another spoonful of soup.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1016 - 1016: Decided to Stay

[1,673 words]

"We are in the Velikan Forest on the eastern side of the Gardum Kingdom. More specifically, this is Arsun village, inside the territory of the Beruin family, a noble family led by Marquess Beruin," Valuk replied.

Aldrian did not know where that was, so he continued.

"My apologies, but I think I need to be more specific. What is the name of the world we are currently in, and how far is this world from the central region of heaven?"

Valuk raised his eyebrows. "We are in the Revitas World. As for the central region of heaven?" Valuk narrowed his eyes.

"I don't know the distance, but isn't that the place where the devils' headquarters is located? Sometimes I hear about it from the talk in the town. A place where the leaders of the devils reside." He then looked at Aldrian.

"Young Master, why are you asking about that place? That place is dangerous and is said to be the source of evil."

Hearing that, Aldrian felt slightly relieved because the name Central Region of Heaven was still known in this place. At least this world was not some distant world that did not know of the existence of the central region of heaven.

"Well, I'm actually on my journey to the central region of heaven to get rid of the evil," Aldrian replied after he swallowed another spoonful of soup.

Valuk was stunned upon hearing the answer. From the questions Aldrian had asked earlier, Valuk knew that Aldrian did not come from this world.

He had sometimes heard about cultivators from other worlds when he visited the town, but he had never seen one.

It seemed that this was the first time he had seen one. And for Aldrian to want to go to the central region of heaven, were people from other worlds always this reckless?

To get rid of the evil? Was he saying that he would make a journey to that dangerous place and fight alone?

If it were that easy, then he would never have heard the despairing stories in the town about how the alliance troops were slowly losing ground in this world.

It was said that many of the devils that came to this world came from that place. Their strength was extraordinary and was said to have already conquered many nearby worlds.

"Excuse me, Young Master, but are you not from this world?" Valuk asked, just to confirm what he had already guessed.

Aldrian nodded. "Yes, I'm not from this world, and I was on my journey to the central region of heaven when some misfortune befell me, which made me end up gravely wounded."

"My apologies, Young Master, but I think you should reconsider your intent. I know Young Master is a pseudo immortal establishment stage cultivator, but facing the devils in the central region of heaven requires much more firepower and manpower," Valuk said.

"I don't know if you already know about this, but I heard from the talk in the town that the devils from that place are truly strong, which has caused the troops of this world to keep getting pushed back. The devils from that place are said to have already conquered the nearby worlds and have been trying to take our world for some time now. And the stories I keep hearing are only getting worse," he added.

Aldrian inwardly felt another sense of relief because, from Valuk's words, this world was under direct attack by the devils of the central region of heaven. That meant this world was at least much closer to the central region of heaven compared to the Ancient Blue Gate World.

But he needed to confirm it later, when he could find a much better source of information.

"Thank you for the advice, Sir Valuk, but I already know who my opponents are and how strong they are. And I have a personal reason that makes me need to reach that place," Aldrian said.

Valuk sighed. "Then I will not keep persuading you, Young Master. I hope that you succeed."

Aldrian smiled and nodded before he took another spoonful of soup.

"Big brother, are you really strong? Could you cut a mountain like Grandpa told me about those strong figures?" Ella suddenly asked. She had only been listening to the two adults talk earlier and did not really understand the topic, but hearing how Aldrian seemed to want to fight intrigued her.

"Ella, don't be impolite to Young Master," Valuk said.

"It's okay, Sir Valuk. I don't find it wrong. Please don't be too hard on Ella," Aldrian said, then looked at Ella with a smile.

"Big brother is strong. Big brother can cut a mountain and many things, and can even make Ella fly."

Ella's eyes glimmered, and she showed a happy smile.

"Could you really make Ella fly?" she asked. Aldrian responded with a nod.

"Then could you make Ella fly after this?" Ella asked once again.

"Of course I can."

"Yay!" Ella shouted happily, which made Valuk sigh.

"My apologies, Young Master, for Ella bothering you with this."

"It's okay, Sir Valuk. Ella already saved my life, and this is the least I can do for her," Aldrian said with a smile.

Not long after that, they finished their meal, and Ella brought Aldrian outside. Before they went out, Aldrian created his domain there, then teleported a storage ring into his grasp before wearing it. He then took out a plain robe from the storage ring and put it on.

He had not worn any storage ring before entering the teleportation gate, just in case what he worried about happened, and it truly did happen.

If he were trapped in chaotic space while wearing a storage ring, the ring could destabilize and might throw everything inside out. He did not want to lose many of his valuable items inside the void.

Once he thought he was already safe, he could simply do what he had just done. He created a domain and then picked his stuff from his other domain.

As Aldrian finally stepped outside the house, he looked around the village. The villagers turned to look at him when they saw a stranger walking around, guided by Ella. The villagers had already heard that Valuk had brought a wounded stranger into his house for treatment.

Some of them worried that the stranger could bring them trouble, so some had urged Valuk not to treat Aldrian, but Valuk kept insisting, and they could only relent. Valuk was someone of high status in the village, so they could not say much once he had already made his decision.

However, because their village had never had any stranger staying there before, they were naturally curious about Aldrian.

Moreover, with how handsome he was and the noble aura surrounding him, he quickly became the center of attention.

Aldrian showed them a smile, which made the villagers feel comfortable and less tense when they saw him. They were hesitant to greet him, afraid that they might offend him, but just from his smile, they started to think that Aldrian was a friendly person.

Some started to greet Aldrian and asked about his condition, while others observed in silence. Aldrian, of course, interacted with the villagers kindly. Some children in the village also started to gather around him.

Ella, who had become Aldrian's guide, could not help but feel smug as she talked to the other kids.

"Big brother will make me fly after this, so you better step aside and don't disturb me," Ella said.

"Woah, is that true?" one of the kids asked in astonishment before he looked at Aldrian. "Mister, could you make me fly too? I want to fly as well."

"Me too, Mister, me too."

"Me too." The kids started to ask one by one, which made Aldrian smile at them. Before he could say anything, a man walked toward them.

"Hush, hush. Don't be impolite. Mister is wounded, don't disturb him," the man said.

Aldrian looked at the middle aged man wearing a sleeveless shirt and carrying a large wooden container on his back. He had short black hair and a firm build, showing that his body was used to physical labor.

On his left arm, there was bandaging that showed he was wounded.

The man also had baron stage cultivation, which was impressive in this village. Since earlier, as Aldrian observed the village, most of the villagers were normal mortals without cultivation.

Only a few had cultivation, with the highest being Valuk. The man in front of him was the second strongest here.

"Village head," some of the kids said.

Aldrian, who finally knew who the man was, smiled at him.

"Ah, it's no worry, Sir. Just let them be, they are only kids," he said.

The village head sighed and smiled at the kids. "My apologies for these kids' behavior, Sir," he then looked at Aldrian. "Ah, please let me introduce myself. I'm the village head, Rokan."

"You can just call me Aldrian, Village Head," Aldrian replied.

Rokan nodded with a smile. "Then I will call you Young Master Aldrian. I thought Young Master must be from a noble family."

"Ah, I'm just a wanderer in the middle of his journey, nothing more," Aldrian replied, but Rokan only smiled and observed Aldrian's body once more.

"It looks like you have already recovered," he said, his gaze showing amazement at the sight of Aldrian's limbs having already regrown and how healthy he seemed.

"When we found you with Physician Valuk, you had lost an arm and a leg, and your body was full of fatal wounds. It's truly a miracle that you could recover this quickly."

"Well, this is truly my luck, for I was found by Ella and could make a full recovery," Aldrian said.

Rokan nodded. "Oh, I have to go first. I need to go to the town quickly and sell these herbs," he said while gesturing toward the container on his back.

"I hope Young Master enjoys your time here, even though our village does not have much to offer."

"I will surely enjoy this village, Village Head. Thank you for letting me stay here," Aldrian replied before they separated.

Aldrian and Ella continue their stroll, followed by the other kids. Aldrian still needs to learn many things about this place, so he decides that staying here for now is best.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1017 - 1017: The Rest of the Four Overlords

[1,599 words]

In an unknown place surrounded by an eerie atmosphere and thick devil energy, a tall giant castle was erected in the midst of barren land. The tall castle's tower pierced the clouds as if challenging the heavens.

The area surrounding the castle was a vast land filled with destruction and the remnants of death from countless years. The destroyed structures of a past civilization stood as witnesses to a tragic event that might have already been forgotten by all beings.

Inside one of the halls of the castle, a circular table and four thrones were placed at its center. The four thrones were positioned in the four cardinal directions.

Three of the thrones were already occupied, while one remained vacant.

On the eastern throne sat a middle aged man with tan skin, his slit pupils revealing that he was not human. He wore a black robe, and his expression showed clear boredom.

On the western throne sat a young man with long white hair. Beside his throne was a long spear with beautiful craftsmanship engraved across its surface. His face was handsome, and he looked like a gentleman scholar filled with wisdom. However, those who knew this young man would feel fear even upon hearing his title.

On the northern throne sat a pale old man wearing a black robe. Although he looked old, as if nearing his end, he possessed the most terrifying aura among them. The deathly aura emanating from him was so intense that he seemed like death itself.

They were three of the four overlords who ruled the central region of Heaven, as well as the overseers tasked by Tarius with taking care of the First Heaven in all cardinal directions.

The Nine-Headed Hydra was tasked with the east, the Heavenly Spear Devil with the west, and the Necromancer King with the north. The fourth, of course, was the dead Vampire King.

These four terrifying existences came from the higher heavens. They were the absolute rulers of the devils within their respective territories.

At this moment, the overlords, who rarely gathered, had once again assembled after a long time. The reason was the news they had heard regarding the Vampire King and his army.

At first, they thought the news was ridiculous, but they could not simply ignore it. Those who remained inside the Vampire King's castle were already panicking, and they were also the ones who had spread the news to them.

The news was that the Vampire King and his army were dead. That mighty army had actually been wiped out in a short period of time, causing panic throughout the Vampire King's castle. The devils within the castle, unsure of what to do, eventually decided to report this news to them.

They already knew about the Vampire King declaring the Code Devil's Judgment and leading his army somewhere to the south. At that time, they thought the Vampire King had already lost his mind, as he had used that code so easily.

They later found out the reason he did that, yet they still felt that the Vampire King had been far too excessive in declaring it.

However, the news that reached them a few hours ago truly made them decide to gather and discuss the matter.

How could the Vampire King, a powerful cultivator from the higher heavens just like them, be dead? Moreover, his army, which also had some cultivators from the higher heavens, was also dead. This had never happened before, so they were confused.

The Heavenly Spear Devil looked at the vacant throne of the Vampire King before turning his gaze toward the other two.

"What do you think about it?" he asked.

The Nine-Headed Hydra snorted. "What do I think? He might really be dead. I don't know how he died. Perhaps he met a humiliating end at the hands of weaklings from the First Heaven. I guess that because he was too enraged by the death of Rulleus, he attacked without thinking and was trapped by someone who killed his son."

"We cannot underestimate this matter. No matter how angry or how reckless the Vampire King was, he was still an immortal like us. He would not die so easily, even if those weaklings trapped him using some unknown means," the Necromancer King said.

"I agree with Necromancer King. Although I find this matter strange and absurd, we cannot simply brush it off. We are talking about the death of a powerful cultivator and a large army that could have swept through any star cluster, and which also consisted of several immortals," the Heavenly Spear Devil said.

The Nine-Headed Hydra did not say anything, as he also agreed with them deep down. Despite having beef with the Vampire King in the past and often mocking him, he knew how strong the Vampire King truly was.

Moreover, the southern side of Heaven was the place where the rebel gods were known to be hiding. It was also where their god's apostle resided, which meant that those responsible for this territory were far from weaklings.

For Vampire King to be killed, something significant must have happened. Something that outside the Vampire King's own power.

"Then do you have any information regarding where the Vampire King exactly went? If we know that, maybe we could start sending an expedition team to investigate the matter," the Nine Headed Hydra asked in an impatient tone.

"Well, from the information I got from the Vampire King's men who stayed in his castle, the Vampire King and his army were moving toward the Arbion Galaxy in the south, following the path his son took before he was killed," the Heavenly Spear Devil said.

"As for why Rulleus went to that place, Rulleus had led his own army there according to the plan laid out by our esteemed apostle. They were moving toward the central star cluster of the Arbion Galaxy."

"In the end, Rulleus and his army were annihilated. The interesting thing is that the signs were the same as those of the Vampire King's army. They were wiped out in a very short time," he added.

The Necromancer King narrowed his eyes.

"The central star cluster of the Arbion Galaxy? Is that the place where our god was supposed to descend, and where the esteemed apostle is located?"

The Heavenly Spear Devil nodded.

"Yes. That is why that place is the most suspicious at this moment. The matter regarding that place is confusing. The plan laid out by the apostle seems to have failed, and there has been no reaction from our god. Even now, the esteemed apostle has not communicated with us or with anyone else."

The apostle mostly communicated with the devils on the southern side of Heaven because they were the closest to him.

The Vampire King and devils under him were the ones most connected to the apostle, leaving the other territories largely blind to the details of the apostle's plans and to what the devils in the southern side of Heaven were doing.

They only knew what the apostle wanted to achieve, and that was all.

However, there was a reason for this.

It was because of how vast the First Heaven was.

Each overlord had their own responsibilities, and the apostle would not task the other three overlords with matters when he himself was staying in the southern Heaven.

It would have been ineffective if the apostle had dragged the other overlords into these matters.

That was why most of the responsibility fell into the Vampire King's hands to execute all of the apostle's plans.

As for the other three overlords, they were more or less set aside, but they understood the situation and saw no problem with it.

However, problems would arise when a moment like this arrived. They were mostly blind to what had truly happened, as they only possessed limited information.

"Damn it. We cannot do much if we don't have enough information, but with something of this scale happening, our god must know about it," the Nine Headed Hydra said.

The Heavenly Spear Devil nodded. "I think so, and we might know what our god will do in the next few days—" He suddenly stopped mid-sentence as he received an incoming voice transmission.

The other two overlords also received voice transmissions, causing all of them to narrow their eyes.

They then looked at each other.

"It looks like we don't need to wait for days. Our god has already made his move," the Heavenly Spear Devil said.

The Nine Headed Hydra and the Necromancer King agreed.

"To think that our god will send many more immortals to descend. It looks like the situation is becoming far more serious," the Necromancer King said.

What they received was a report from the devils guarding the place where immortals normally appeared when descending. The report stated that more than nine immortals had descended at the same time.

Moreover, they carried the same aura as the overlords, which meant there was a strong possibility that they possessed the same level of cultivation as them in the higher heavens. They were Immortal Saint stage cultivators.

"For now, let's postpone our decision regarding our next action. Let's go meet those people and ask them about this matter. They must already have some sort of purpose for descending here," the Heavenly Spear Devil said.

The others also agreed, and not long after that, they departed from the castle.

At Aldrian's place, the sun had almost sunk below the horizon. He had just finished entertaining the village children by making them fly. They were truly happy, and it also made the other villagers more amicable toward Aldrian.

Aldrian and Ella were on their way back to Valuk's house when they encountered the village head, who was leading his horse.

However, Aldrian could sense that something was weighing heavily on the village head's mind at that moment.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1018 - 1018: Their Past

[1,592 words]

"Village head, good evening," Aldrian greeted.

"Good evening, young master. It seems you are done with the sightseeing and entertaining those children?" the village head replied with smile.

"Yes," Aldrian paused slightly. He wanted to ask what was on the village head's mind, but he decided not to.

The village head nodded with a smile. "I hope you like it here. Ugh, I just came back from the town, so I will take my leave first. I feel like I want to rest."

He then continued walking as Aldrian kept looking at the village head. Ella remained silent since earlier and only watched their interaction.

They then continued their walk until they finally reached Valuk's home. Inside the house, Valuk had already prepared a meal, and it was the same menu as in the morning.

After the meal, Ella, who had been playing all day, felt tired and eventually fell asleep. Valuk brought her to her bed.

"It looks like young master truly entertained Ella all day. She seems very tired," Valuk said after placing Ella on the bed.

Aldrian smiled. "She is truly an energetic child, and I am glad I could give her a happy experience that she can always remember."

Valuk sighed. "Thank you, young master, for giving her good memories. She is a pitiful child, and seeing her happy gives me happiness and peace of mind." This made Aldrian fall silent for a moment.

"May I know what happened to her?" he finally asked.

Valuk smiled. "Would you like to accompany me for an evening talk?"

"Of course, Sir Valuk. I would like to," Aldrian answered. They then sat on the woven bench in front of the house. Aldrian then teleported a small table from his palace, along with two cups of tea.

Valuk was stunned when Aldrian suddenly made these things appear out of nowhere. He then watched as Aldrian brewed the tea for the two of them, and he could only remain silent while watching Aldrian do his thing.

After the tea was done, Aldrian served it to Valuk.

Valuk looked at the hot tea in his cup for a moment before taking a sip. The moment he tasted the tea and it entered his throat, his eyes widened. He instantly felt a refreshing sensation from the tea, and it even slightly propelled his cultivation.

He closed his eyes for a moment before sighing.

"What a good tea. The taste and the effect," he commented before opening his eyes and looking at Aldrian with a smile.

"As expected, young master's background is not ordinary. For young master to have this kind of tea, you must be from a big noble family somewhere."

Aldrian just smiled and also sipped his tea. Valuk stayed silent for a moment before looking at the night scenery.

"Ella. Her parents died when she was still three years old because of the devils," Valuk said. "We actually came from a distant place. The devils that invaded this world unfortunately chose our region as the first place to be invaded. In that fateful event, I lost my son and daughter-in-law."

"My condolences," Aldrian said softly.

Valuk smiled slightly. "Thank you for your words, young master," he said before releasing a sigh.

"After the devils' invasion, we kept escaping as refugees before we ended up in this place. I am truly grateful to the village head for letting us stay here, and I can also contribute to the society here as a physician."

"This place is far from the front line and is safe. But I do not think it will last for long, as the front line is getting nearer and the devils are pushing back our alliance forces."

"For Ella, living without her parents and seeing them get killed, I am afraid she will always carry that tragic event in her memories. I want to fill her life with good memories, but with our current situation, I cannot do much for her. That is why..." Valuk smiled toward Aldrian.

"I am truly thankful that young master could entertain her and give her happiness, even if it is only for a short time."

Aldrian looked at Valuk's glad smile and then looked forward.

"She will live a happy life," he said.

Valuk also looked forward. "I hope so."

He and Valuk then talked about many things. Valuk gave a lot of information about this world as far as he knew. Even if it was only common knowledge, it was more than enough for Aldrian. He needed to learn many things.

They also touched on the situation of the devils in this world. Just like everywhere the devils invaded, the world was truly overwhelmed by their strength. Moreover, the ones that invaded this world came directly from the central region of the heaven.

The world's condition was not good, with almost half of it already falling into the devils' army.

The devils had only started their attack four years ago, yet they had already taken over almost half of the world. The alliance forces, which consisted of various empires, kingdoms, sects, and organizations of this world, did not seem enough to contain the invasion.

Initially, their world also received some help from nearby worlds. However, since the devils attacked other worlds as well, those worlds had to fight for their own survival, which meant they could no longer help each other.

Aldrian understood the situation, which made him decide that he had to solve the devils' problem here first. If he wanted to continue his journey to the central region of the heaven, then he would need the help of the people of this world.

They continued to talk about many things until late into the night, and from their conversation, Aldrian gained a lot of knowledge about the place where he was staying.

On the next day, Aldrian was strolling outside again, and this time, he was alone. As he walked, he met the village head, who was riding his horse. Aldrian smiled at him.

"Want to go to the town again, village head?" he asked.

"Yes, young master. I need to sell these spiritual herbs to the town until I empty all my storage," the village head said as he tapped a box on the back of the horse. There were several boxes, and when Aldrian looked inside using his domain sense, he saw many dried plants.

Aldrian had not been curious about the herbs the village head sold when they met for the first time yesterday. But after identifying the plants at this moment, he was surprised.

'Those are Crimson Flame Mushrooms.'

The name came from the shape of the mushroom, which looked like a burning crimson flame. If this mushroom was consumed raw, it could become poisonous.

However, this mushroom had the effect of enhancing energy if it was processed correctly. If it was used as one of the ingredients to make a pill, it would give great benefits to many cultivators.

It could become a pill to accelerate cultivation. It could become a pill to support breakthroughs. It could become a replenishment pill that even a cultivator at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage would desire, and many others.

With this kind of effect, this mushroom was sought after by many alchemists. The mushroom itself was quite rare, but not because it was difficult to grow. Instead, it only grew in special environments, which were rare themselves. It could grow overnight, but it would only grow in those specific places.

To harvest this mushroom, one could not simply pick it carelessly. If it was harvested improperly, the mushroom's effects would be greatly reduced.

From his observation, the ones inside the boxes were in good condition despite already being dried. That meant these mushrooms were correctly harvested.

Aldrian suddenly became interested in the village head's story. How could he have harvested these mushrooms?

"Village head, may I follow you to the town? I want to see the town myself," Aldrian said.

The village head raised his eyebrows before smiling and nodding.

"Of course, young master. You may follow me to the town. I also feel more assured if someone as strong as young master accompanies me," he replied in a joking tone.

"Let me bring another horse for you, young master," the village head said as he got down from his horse and tied it to the side of the road.

"How about I put the boxes into my storage ring and we depart for the town my way? That would be much faster and easier," Aldrian offered.

The village head was stunned. "Is that okay, young master? I do not want to burden you. I could just borrow another horse."

"It is okay, village head. It is not a burden to me. Since I want to visit the town anyway, I can also help you. Just take it as my way of repaying your kindness for letting me stay here," Aldrian answered.

The village head sighed and nodded. "Alright."

Aldrian smiled. "Good, that is settled then."

Aldrian stored all the boxes inside his storage ring. The village head, who watched this, could not help but think how good it would be if he also had a storage ring.

After storing the boxes, he then brought the village head to fly using his energy, which was the village head's first experience of flying. As they flew, the village head showed the way to Aldrian, and after fifteen minutes, they finally arrived at the town.

The journey that the village head usually took five hours to travel by horse was actually shortened to fifteen minutes!

This truly astonished the village head, though he had already expected it to some extent. He had never experienced flying before, and he did not know how fast a cultivator at Aldrian's level could fly.

They landed near the town gate of Abrug Town, the closest town to their village.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1019 - 1019: Selling the Crimson Flame Mushrooms

[1,618 words]

Aldrian then picked up a robe from his storage ring that covered his features and wore it. He knew that he would attract attention with his face here, even though no one would recognize him.

The village head walked ahead as a guide toward the town's gate. In front of the gate, there were already several lines of people waiting to enter the town.

Aldrian and the village head also joined one of the lines and waited for their turn. While waiting, Aldrian observed his surroundings. The guards protecting the gate were not too strong. The strongest among them was only at the baron stage, while the rest were at the disciple stage.

Those who wished to enter were varied, including travelers, merchants, and others. Among them, Aldrian noticed a group of people with tattered appearances and tired expressions. Many of them were old people, women, and children.

As Aldrian observed them, a voice transmission suddenly reached him.

"They are war refugees," the village head said.

Aldrian nodded in understanding.

"The influx of refugees keeps coming almost every day. I don't know the situation on the front lines, but I think it is not good," the village head added.

Aldrian looked at the refugees for a moment before turning his gaze forward again. After waiting for a short while, it was finally their turn.

"If you do not have a pass permit, pay three low-level energy stones for one. The permit will be valid for four days," the guard said to Aldrian and the village head.

The village head already had a permit, as he had obtained it just yesterday, while Aldrian did not have one yet.

"Let me—"

"No need."

The village head wanted to take out his own energy stones so Aldrian could enter, but Aldrian was faster as he took out three low-level energy stones.

Aldrian handed the energy stones to the guards, and he was then given a piece of paper with the guard's stamp on it. The guard also asked Aldrian to stand on top of a formation, which the guard then activated.

After it was activated, Aldrian felt something embed itself into his body. It was a kind of distinctive aura, which made him immediately understand its purpose.

He had seen this kind of thing before when he was in the Blue Pearl World. These formations were used to distinguish the town's denizens from visitors.

Because of the influx of refugees coming in, the authorities of many cities had to use this method to control the population and keep order.

With so many refugees entering, there were bound to be problems. It could be issues related to places to stay, or social problems, or even cultural conflicts.

They had to place limitations on refugees so order could be maintained more easily.

However, this kind of measure was not always applied because of war and the continuous flow of refugees. Sometimes, it was used simply to separate true denizens of the city from visitors.

The reasons were different, but the concept remained the same.

"Keep bringing the permit paper with you and do not lose it. There are many patrols that will sometimes check the pass permits of those visiting the town, so be prepared," the guard said.

Aldrian nodded, and the village head showed his permit paper before they continued into the town.

Once they entered, they were greeted by packed streets and blocks of buildings.

"This way, young master. We need to sell the herbs first," the village head said. He guided Aldrian as they walked through the crowded streets. The atmosphere itself was not much different from other towns or cities Aldrian had visited.

Despite the war that would determine the fate of this world, the town did not seem too affected. The front line was still quite far from this place. That was also why this place had become one of the destinations for refugees.

After walking for forty minutes, they arrived at a tall building packed with people on its ground floor. Above the gate hung a wooden plank that read, "Treasures Pavilion."

"This is the place where we can sell or buy many things. The pavilion itself is the property of the noble family that rules over this region, the Beruin family," the village head explained as they stepped inside.

After entering the pavilion, they walked toward one of the vacant receptionists.

"Ah, Mister Rokan, you have already arrived? Let me bring you to Sir Almir. We will take care of the herbs. They are on your horse outside?" the receptionist asked when she saw the village head.

"Ah, no. I brought them with me. I received help from my friend here using his storage ring," the village head replied.

The receptionist then looked at Aldrian and froze for a moment when she finally saw the face beneath the robe. It was a handsome young face that made her heart skip a beat. She unconsciously blushed and lowered her head.

However, she quickly regained her composure and smiled at the village head.

"Ah, alright then. I will bring you to Sir Almir."

"Thank you," the village head replied as they were guided deeper into the building. They then stepped onto the third floor and arrived in front of one of the rooms.

The receptionist knocked on the door. "Excuse me, sir. Mister Rokan is here."

There was a moment of silence before a male voice replied, "Come in."

The receptionist nodded and opened the door. The moment it opened, Aldrian saw a tall man with neatly kept blond hair and a mustache. The man had low pseudo immortal foundation stage cultivation. When he saw the village head, he showed a smile.

"Ah, Mister Rokan. It is truly a pleasure every time I see you. Please, have a seat while we wait for the herbs to be brought in from your horse," he said.

"Sir Renfil, thank you for the greeting, but I already brought the herbs with me. I received help from my friend here, as I stored the herbs inside his storage ring," the village head said.

The man called Renfil looked at Aldrian and was stunned, just like the receptionist earlier. He saw a handsome young face.

He could not sense any cultivation from Aldrian, as Aldrian hid his aura so thoroughly that others would think he was an ordinary mortal.

Renfil had never seen the village head bring anyone with him before, so he wondered who this person was.

Although he could not sense any cultivation from Aldrian, Aldrian's presence itself gave off a strange feeling, as if Renfil were standing before someone of much higher status, someone he needed to treat with great respect.

Still, Renfil set aside that feeling and continued to smile.

"I see. Then please put the herbs here. Let me check them," he said. Aldrian then took out ten boxes from his storage ring.

Renfil opened one of the boxes and began to inspect it with his eyes. He did not check in detail, only touching some of the mushrooms and observing them for a few moments before opening another box. He repeated this action until all the boxes had been checked.

"All is good, as expected from you, Mister Roka," Renfil said as he took out a small pouch from his storage ring.

"This is one hundred low level energy stones,"

Hearing that, both Aldrian and the village head were stunned.

For Aldrian, he was stunned because he could not understand how Crimson Flame Mushrooms could be this cheap?

This was one of the herbs sought after by many cultivators who could process it. Depending on the place or demand, they could be sold for at least one peak level energy stone per kilogram.

From his estimation, each box here contained one kilogram, which meant the village head should have received ten peak level energy stones.

"One hundred low-level energy stones? Ten low-level energy stones per box? This is five energy stones less than yesterday, Sir Renfil. Could you keep it at yesterday's price, Sir Renfil? I already have difficulty buying daily necessities for my family even at yesterday's price. How am I supposed to manage with the current price?" the village head said in an imploring tone.

Renfil put on a regretful expression. "I'm sorry, Mister Rokan, but that is the most I can give you today. The situation of the world is truly not good, as our logistics lines have started to be cut off due to devil infiltration. We have to save as much as possible so we have enough funds to support our troops on the front lines."

"The war has really taken a toll on our financial situation, so I hope you understand, Mister Rokan. I truly do not want it to be like this, but I do not have a choice, do I?"

The village head sighed heavily and looked at the pouch in his grasp.

Aldrian frowned deeply. He found that what Renfil had just said was merely an excuse to buy the herbs at a cheap price.

Even if what Renfil said was true, the value of Crimson Flame Mushrooms was still extremely high, to the point that even pricing them at only mid-level energy stones was practically giving them for free.

And yet, they were being bought for low level energy stones?

If these people were truly tight on finances, then at the very least, they should have bought them at high level energy stones.

Aldrian closed his eyes and created his domain before spreading his domain sense. As his domain sense covered the entire building, he sensed many peak level energy stones stored inside a special underground vault.

He could even sense many peak level energy stones within this very room, stored inside a small vault.

Although he did not want to involve himself in the village head's business, this situation did not sit right with him. He knew that the village head could gain more.

Much more.

"Alright—"

"Wait."

Aldrian cut off the village head's words as he opened his eyes and looked at Renfil.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1020 - 1020: Giving What is His Right

[1,617 words]

"Wait," Aldrian said.

Renfil and the village head looked at Aldrian as he suddenly spoke.

"Increase the price. Selling Crimson Flame Mushrooms for only that much is unacceptable. You must know how valuable Crimson Flame Mushrooms are, right? Even if your organization has financial difficulties, the value of the mushrooms themselves has not diminished," Aldrian said.

"Let's say your organization is making financial adjustments because of the war. Even then, if you want to lower the price, you should not lower it below high level energy stones."

Hearing that, both Renfil and the village head were stunned. Renfil frowned and looked at the village head.

"What is this man's relationship to you?"

"I'm sorry, sir. This is my guest from outside this territory, so he might not know about you," the village head said quickly, then looked at Aldrian with an imploring expression.

"Young master, it's okay. At least I got something from it. I'm afraid of troubling you," he said through voice transmission.

"No. You will have more, and you can bring more back to your family. This man is not only trampling on your dignity, but also on the effort you put into picking these mushrooms," Aldrian replied.

Aldrian could sense the kind of thoughts and emotions inside the man named Renfil.

He was mocking the village head. He was disgusted by the village head's presence. He felt that he could take as much profit as possible from this transaction.

This was one type of person that made Aldrian sick, and he felt like giving them the harsh punishment if they were in his empire. People who sought to make as much profit as possible despite knowing others' difficulties. Worse, they used the war as an excuse to gain more profit when they should not.

With the war threatening the world at this very moment, they were making the lives of commoners much more difficult while gaining more profit for themselves.

In the Aster Empire, there were already rules to prevent this kind of thing from happening. Merchants or nobles could not buy any treasures from commoners below the market price. Even if something major happened within the empire, for example a war that made the situation difficult, any price fluctuation must not be lowered or raised too drastically.

This rule also applied in reverse so commoners could not take advantage of nobles. They needed each other, after all.

Now that something so outrageous was happening right in front of him, there was no way Aldrian would simply stand back and watch when he had the power to stop it.

"But—"

"I will see that the village head is given more energy stones, enough to cover your family's needs for years," Aldrian said, cutting off the village head's words. Aldrian looked Renfil directly in the eyes.

"I can hear your inner thoughts, you know? At this moment, you are wondering who I am. You are cursing me and the village head, and hoping that we will just leave without causing much trouble. You want to gain as much profit as possible from the village head? Not on my watch."

The village head widened his eyes in shock, while Renfil's expression contorted in fury.

"You... do you know who I am?! How dare you ask for more when I have already generously given you something! You should be thankful that you still got something from me! If not for my generosity, I would have taken your things without paying anything!" he shouted.

"This is taking too much time if we keep going like this," Aldrian said with boredom. Suddenly, Renfil's body stiffened before relaxing. His furious expression froze, then slowly turned blank.

"I want you to give the village head the energy stones that he was supposed to receive all this time from selling Crimson Flame Mushroom," Aldrian said.

"Yes, my lord," Renfil replied flatly. He then walked to one side of the room while Aldrian took a seat on the sofa and smiled at the village head.

"Come, sit, village head. Let's wait until he is done," he said.

The village head, who still did not know what had happened, looked at Renfil in confusion before turning back to Aldrian.

"Young master, what did you do to Sir Renfil?" he asked.

Aldrian put on an oblivious expression. "Hm? I did not do anything. This esteemed Sir Renfil might be having a moment of realization that he was in the wrong and is doing something to redeem his mistakes."

The village head knew that Aldrian was spouting nonsense.

What realization? He must have done something to Renfil!

The village head looked at Renfil again as he reached one of the walls and pressed on a certain part of it. Suddenly, the wall opened to both sides, revealing what was hidden behind it. It was a vault the size of a wardrobe, with the same height as Renfil.

Renfil then touched the vault and injected his energy into it. The moment the vault opened, a strong aura spread across the room, making the village head astonished. A refreshing sensation and rich heaven and earth energy filled the air, making his body instinctively want to absorb it.

The village head then saw Renfil take out a large sack from his storage ring and begin filling it with energy stones. They were white stones, each about the size of a pigeon's egg.

The village head trembled as he watched. The number of energy stones was staggering, and every one of them was at peak level!

Renfil kept filling the sack until it was almost full. Then he took out another sack and continued. He repeated the process until there were three sacks filled with peak-level energy stones.

After he was done, he closed the vault and the wall.

Renfil then brought the three sacks to the village head, who was still speechless and did not know what to do. He stood frozen, able only to watch as Renfil placed three sacks full of peak-level energy stones in front of him.

The village head gulped. This much was already enough for him and his family to live comfortably for years to come. He could even develop the village into a much better place and still have many energy stones left.

However, for Aldrian, seeing this sight only made him irritated. With that many peak-level energy stones, this meant the village head had been taken advantage of for many years.

Aldrian stood up and walked toward the village head, who still was not sure what he needed to do. He looked at Aldrian again.

"Let me bring it for you, village head," Aldrian said as he put the three sacks into his storage ring. He then looked at Renfil, who still had a blank expression.

"After we leave this place, you will forget everything that happened here just now, regarding our visit," he said.

"Yes, my lord," Renfil replied.

Aldrian nodded and looked at the village head. "Let's go. We can leave this place."

The village head nodded, but everything still felt surreal to him. What happened to Renfil? Why was he suddenly obeying Aldrian?

However, he did not dare to ask Aldrian and simply followed him out of the room and then out of the building. The moment they stepped outside, Renfil, who was still standing there with a blank expression, finally regained some clarity in his eyes and blinked a few times.

He looked at his surroundings with slight confusion. He felt that something was strange, but he did not know what.

He wondered why he was standing there at that moment. He tried to remember what had happened, but he truly could not recall why he was standing there or what he was supposed to be doing.

It was as if he had wanted to do something just a moment ago, but he had already forgotten what it was, which left him confused. After a few moments of confusion, he simply brushed it off and shrugged.

'Well, whatever,' he thought, before continuing what he had been doing before meeting the village head and Aldrian. He was still oblivious to the fact that almost half of the peak-level energy stones in his private vault were already gone.

This was the direct effect of Aldrian's hypnotic technique on lower-level cultivators. Without even needing to erase memories directly from their minds, Aldrian could achieve this with a single command using his hypnotic technique.

Aldrian's hypnosis was far too strong for cultivators below his level.

When he ordered them to forget something, their minds would obey and erase the related memories on their own. Their subconscious would act accordingly, making them think they had wanted to do something but had simply forgotten about it.

On the busy street, Aldrian and the village head were walking side by side toward the market area.

This was a routine the village head always followed after selling Crimson Flame Mushrooms. He would buy daily necessities for his family, such as food.

Throughout the walk, the village head wanted to ask Aldrian regarding Renfil, but he did not dare to. Still, it was obvious that he looked worried.

Aldrian smiled at him as they neared the market.

"You don't have to worry about Renfil, village head. He will not look for trouble with you even if you meet him again in the future. Well, if you still want to meet him. With the energy stones you have now, I think you can elevate your family to a better life."

The village head sighed. "I'm sorry, young master. To think that you involved yourself in this for my sake, I feel ashamed."

Aldrian waved his hand. "No problem. It just irked me to see someone like that. Taking benefits while you are struggling with life. Don't you know that Crimson Flame Mushrooms are truly valuable? Selling them for only low level energy stones is simply ridiculous."

The village head sighed again. "Of course I know, young master, but..." His gaze turned resigned.

"I just cannot do anything about it."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1021 - 1021: The Village Head's Story

[1,578 words]

Aldrian looked at the sadness in the village head's eyes and understood how powerless the man must have felt, knowing that he had been taken advantage of yet being unable to do anything about it.

There was no way a normal commoner like the village head, who struggled just to provide for his family, could go against someone like Renfil, who had status and was also someone he depended on.

"The Beruin family actually strictly prohibited me from selling the Crimson Flame mushrooms anywhere else," the village head said.

"However, at one time, I sold one box of Crimson Flame mushrooms in another territory, and I actually received two peak level energy stones. With that, I was able to invite a physician to check one of my son's condition. I really could not help it. At that time, I desperately needed energy stones so I could have my son examined, as his pain intensified."

"Crimson Flame mushrooms only grow in rare places. In this world, it is said that there are only two places where they grow. One is far away on the other side of the world, and the other one is on the mountain near the village. So once they discovered that the mushrooms had appeared in another nearby territory, they knew that I was the one who sold them."

"Because of that, the Beruin family punished me by imposing higher taxes and lowering the price even further."

"They never bought the mushrooms at their real value. Because of the punishment, they bought them at an even cheaper price than the already low price they paid before. That is why they could toy with me, and I could not do anything about it. I still needed them, because they were the only ones who bought the mushrooms." The village head then fell silent.

"I see. However, there is still something I do not understand. Why did they not simply seize the opportunity to take the job from you and send their own people to harvest the mushrooms themselves? Instead of always depending on you to harvest them," Aldrian asked.

"I know that Crimson Flame mushrooms cannot be harvested through normal means, but I think they could have just kept trying."

The village head smiled when he heard that. "Although it is true that they could try, that would be impossible, considering the place where the mushrooms grow. The place where they grow is dangerous, and I am the only one who can enter it. The mushrooms grow on a high mountain that has become the nest of the Silver Wings Eagle, and the one guarding that area is a low pseudo-immortal stage eagle."

Hearing that, Aldrian was surprised, and the village head, seeing his reaction, understood why.

"Young master must be wondering why I am still alive despite harvesting mushrooms from such a place," the village head said with a smile.

"Well, my late father was a great gardener with deep knowledge. He worked for a noble family in the past before arriving in the village. He was the one who first discovered the

mushrooms there, as he accidentally entered the eagle's territory when the eagle was not there, and he successfully harvested them. He then made an agreement with the eagle when the eagle came back."

"Crimson Flame mushrooms actually brought benefits to the Silver Wings Eagle. However, because the place where they grow is tricky and can only be reached by humans with much smaller bodies than even the eagle's human form, my father offered to split the harvest between himself and the eagle."

"Since then, they have created a win-win solution that has held until this moment. The Silver Wings Eagle guards the place where the mushrooms grow, and I bring the beast its share of the mushrooms. The Beruin family could not do anything about it, as they would not recklessly fight the Silver Wings Eagle just for the mushrooms."

"The risk is too great, from the manpower required to the place itself, which could be destroyed by the eagle, causing the mushroom's place of growth to disappear entirely. Because of this, a status quo was created between all parties."

Aldrian nodded in understanding. He finally understood the entire picture of the village head's situation.

In the end, the Beruin family did not have a choice but to depend on the village head. They did not have anyone who could harvest the mushrooms besides him.

The same applied to the Silver Wings Eagle, which also depended on him, making the situation advantageous for the village head.

However, the village head himself could not process the mushrooms, so he and his father had no choice but to sell them outside in order to gain benefits.

The only one the village head could sell them to was the Beruin family, and he needed energy stones for his daily necessities.

Because he needed energy stones, he accepted the unfair treatment he received from Renfil. As long as he obtained any energy stones at all, he accepted it. Aldrian knew that the village head endured this kind of treatment because of his family. He had no choice but to hold on for their sake.

Renfil must have known this, which was why he could do whatever he wanted with the price, as long as he gave something to the village head.

Basically, the village head was trapped because of his family's situation, and the Beruin family took advantage of it. However, at the same time, the village head also used the Crimson Flame mushrooms as bargaining chips to make the Beruin family depend on him.

This was a delicate situation between the village head, the Silver Wings Eagle, and the Beruin family.

"Village head, may I know what your son's sickness is? I suppose his condition is also one of the biggest reasons you decided to stay in your current situation," Aldrian asked.

The village head nodded. "Yes, young master. My son was born with a premature meridians, which cause him to feel sick and in pain almost all the time. I have to buy elixirs to reduce his pain whenever I have enough energy stones."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. He could only imagine how much pain his son must have endured all this time with a premature meridians.

That condition was rare, but once someone was born with it, they would feel pain throughout their body, as their meridians disturbed their muscles. They also could not cultivate.

To lessen the pain, they had to drink elixirs that functioned as painkillers, which were not cheap.

To truly fix the problem, only a few physicians were capable of doing so. Even if the village head found one, the price would be so high that there was no way the village head could afford their services.

Because of this, Aldrian's amazement and respect for the village head grew. The village head had not given up on his son despite his condition and continued to take care of him no matter how difficult it was.

This kind of man was one of the kinds Aldrian respected the most.

As they conversed, they finally reached the market. The village head first bought rice for his family. Usually, he would spend five low level energy stones just to buy a small pack of rice, which could only last for three meals for his family.

The price truly ridiculous to Aldrian, but it appeared to be because of the war, which had caused prices to spike, as the seller explained that he had no choice. Aldrian knew the seller was not lying, so he did not make trouble for him.

They bought the rice for one peak level energy stone, which left the seller truly shocked. In the end, they bought the seller's entire stock of rice, and it still gave the seller a great profit.

However, Aldrian did not care, as they now had plenty of energy stones. After that, they bought meat and vegetables as well. They purchased the entire merchandise from every seller they visited, which attracted quite a bit of attention from others.

The village head also felt surreal, as he had just bought so much that he had never dared to imagine before.

Aldrian then bought a storage ring for the village head so he could have one of his own.

When the village head wanted to buy elixirs for his son, Aldrian stopped him.

"You do not have to buy elixirs. Fortunately, I am something of a physician myself. I can check your son and try to fix his condition, as I have already tried to fix something more severe."

Hearing that, the village head was stunned, and his expression turned as if he was about to cry. His eyes watered as he bowed deeply to Aldrian.

"Thank you, young master. If you can truly fix my son's condition, I am deeply grateful. I will do everything I can to repay you."

Aldrian smiled as he helped the village head straighten up.

"It is alright. You do not need to think about repayment. I do not expect anything. The most important thing is that your son can be healed and live normally," he replied.

The village head nodded as he wiped away his tears.

"Is there anything else you wish to do here?" Aldrian asked.

"No, everything is done, young master. We can return to the village," the village head replied.

"Alright, then—" Before Aldrian could finish speaking, several people suddenly blocked their path.

One of them was a burly man with a scar on his face. He grinned at them.

"Hello. Would you please let us check your permit papers?" he asked.

Even from his grin, Aldrian could sense that these men were looking for trouble.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1022 - 1022: Trouble Coming to the Village?

[1,546 words]

Aldrian looked at the grinning man with a calm expression, then glanced at the others.

The surrounding people also started to look their way, as the group was attracting attention by stopping someone and asking for permit papers.

There were five people in this group, and they wore casual attire, without showing anything that made them look like enforcers of this town. However, this could be how the enforcers here operated, checking visitors abruptly so none of them could escape.

Moreover, from the cultivation of these people alone, Aldrian knew that this group was not simple. The grinning man was actually a peak grand duke stage cultivator, while the others were at the marquess stage.

Aldrian did not want to judge them solely by their appearance, but he could sense malicious intent from them.

"Young master, they seem to be the town's troops wearing civilian attire. We should avoid trouble with them," the village head said through voice transmission.

Aldrian understood but did not say anything. He wanted to see what these people would do. Without speaking, he took out his permit paper. The village head did the same, and they handed the papers to the man in front of them.

The man checked the two permits before looking at them with a smile.

"I'm sorry, gentlemen, but I think these two permits are not valid."

"What? How could they not be valid? The guards at the gate themselves were the ones who gave them," the village head said.

"The papers do not have another stamp that shows your permit as a merchant," the man replied.

"We got a report that you bought large quantities of supplies, something that a merchant would usually do," he added.

"Since when is there something like that? As long as I—"

"Stop, village head," Aldrian stopped the village head as he finally spoke.

He finally understood why they were causing trouble for them. It was not far from the matter of the energy stones. Seeing that he and the village head bought many things with peak level energy stones must have attracted malicious intent.

Did these people think they were easy prey because they looked weak and could be bullied?

Aldrian wanted to give them a lesson, but he thought that this was not the time for it.

While waiting for Aldrian and the village head's response, the man and his group's bodies suddenly became relaxed, and their expressions turned blank.

"I want all of you to forget everything about us," Aldrian said in a voice that only the group could hear.

"Yes, my lord," the group responded in a flat tone.

Aldrian looked at the village head.

"Let's go. Just leave them be," he said. "I will bring us back to the village instantly, so do not be too surprised, village head."

The village head looked at Aldrian speechlessly, his face filled with confusion, before their bodies disappeared, which stunned the people who were watching in their direction.

After they left, the group that had stopped them regained their clarity. They blinked a few times and looked at each other with confused expressions on their faces.

What the hell just happened? Why were they standing there?

They looked at their surroundings and only saw some people glancing at them before continuing with their activities.

The group and the surrounding people were truly confused about what was going on. At first, these people wanted to check the permits of the two men, but now they were standing there like dazed individuals.

The group could not understand what had happened either and decided to brush it off and continue walking.

Back in the village, the village head was stunned and looked at his surroundings, which made him even more astonished. They were actually back in their village, right beside his horse!

How was this possible?

So many things had happened in the short time he had been with Aldrian that he had yet to fully process everything.

Aldrian smiled at him. "Let's go. Bring me to your son."

Once his son was mentioned, the village head's mind became much clearer, and his eyes glimmered. His expression became enthusiastic.

"This way, young master."

They then walked toward the village head's house, which was not much different from the other houses in the village. Aldrian met the village head's wife, a cultivator at the disciple stage, and their three children, one daughter and two sons.

The youngest son was seventeen years old, and he lay on his bed with a pale complexion. His face clearly held an expression of pain, but he could still communicate properly. Without waiting too long, Aldrian began to fix the young man's condition, which was easy for him.

Compared to some of the cases he had treated in the past, such as allowing Angelica to see and walk, this was like a walk in the park.

The moment he finished the treatment, the village head's youngest son could feel the difference, which left him shocked. The others were also shocked when they saw the change in him, and they felt deeply touched and grateful to Aldrian.

Moreover, after hearing what Aldrian had done in the town, the village head's family could not express their gratitude in any way other than kowtowing to him.

Aldrian could only sigh and accept all of their courtesy afterward. Since they had bought many food materials from the market, the wife and daughter cooked various dishes for a feast.

This was both to serve Aldrian and to celebrate the recovery of one of their family members.

The atmosphere was truly joyful, something rarely seen in this family. Aldrian was genuinely glad that he could bring them such happiness.

After the feast, when Aldrian left the village head's house, he took a stroll for a moment as he considered his next step. Now that he had stayed there for a few days and gained at least some information about this world, he felt that it was finally time for him to leave the village.

Aldrian kept strolling and met some of the villagers. By this point, he had already explored the entire village and met all of its residents.

At this time, they were truly welcoming to him, and he was friendly toward them. It was no longer like when he had first appeared, when some of the villagers still doubted him.

As he was interacting with some of the villagers, he suddenly sensed several presences approaching the village from the forest area, entering his domain. The number reached more than thirty, and they were humans riding large wolves.

Despite the many trees, they rode the wolves skillfully, evading the trees without greatly reducing their speed. Their movements were well coordinated, which prevented them from crashing into one another.

They also had varying cultivation levels, with the strongest among them at the duke stage, and there were three such individuals.

While Aldrian was still observing them through his domain sense, a voice could be heard in the distance.

"Bandits! Bandits have come!" The voice came from a villager running from the forest area.

The moment many villagers heard the shout, panic spread instantly, and they began to run. Village activities stopped at once. Many people immediately grabbed their children and hid inside their houses.

Some people, such as the village head and Valuk, also rushed out of their houses and ran toward the villager who shouted about the bandits. Aldrian approached as well.

"Village head, when I was hunting in the mountains, I saw the Iron Wolf Bandits riding their wolves at high speed toward the village. They will arrive in less than ten minutes," the man who first spotted the bandits reported.

The village head gritted his teeth. "Damn it. They already took so much from us last month, and now they are coming back again. Added to the taxes from the Beruin family, sooner or later we might be left with nothing."

"Village head, are these the same bandits that people here talked about?" Aldrian suddenly asked from the side as he approached them, drawing the attention of the villagers.

The village head nodded.

"Yes, young master. They are the ones who always come to extort us and the nearby villages. We do not know where they came from, but they appeared about six months ago and have been extorting many things from us since then, without a fixed interval."

"Sometimes they appear every week, sometimes only once a month. We have already reported the bandits to the town's authorities, but they still have not been able to resolve the problem. They said they have not yet been able to catch the bandits."

When the village head said this, anger filled his voice.

"Those nobles must not be serious about getting rid of the bandits, which is why they can run rampant in this area," one of the villagers shouted angrily.

"Yes, that's right. Those nobles must think we are not worth their attention, so they let those bandits do whatever they want," another commented.

Aldrian thought for a moment, then looked at the villagers.

"Alright, calm down, everyone. Let me see these bandits myself. Please do not panic and stay inside the village area."

After saying that, Aldrian disappeared.

Hearing this, the villagers' eyes widened and they felt a wave of relief.

"If young master is the one who meets them, then this can be resolved."

"Yes, with young master here, there is nothing to worry about."

The villagers spoke one after another, and the village head looked at the place where Aldrian had been standing and sighed.

It seemed they would owe Aldrian another great debt once again.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1023 - 1023: Eliminating Bandits

[1,543 words]

Not far from the village, a group of more than thirty giant wolves with grey fur and black tails were moving fast as they approached it. On the back of each wolf was a cultivator seated on a saddle strapped to the wolf's back.

Their movement was truly fast despite the dense trees surrounding them. Thanks to the wolves' agility, they did not crash into the trees or into each other even once, despite being very close to one another.

The one leading them was a man at peak duke stage. He had a burly body, with an axe strapped to his back. A burn like scar covered his right cheek, making it look as if it had melted, which made him look intimidating.

Behind him, closest to his wolf, were two other duke stage cultivators. One of them was a skinny man, while the other wore robes.

"Come on, boys. We will party tonight. We will have a great feast!" the leader shouted.

"Ahahaha!" the others laughed as they continued moving at high speed.

"Boss, are there really many energy stones in that poor village? The last time we were there, we already took many things from them, which made them almost have nothing left," the skinny man asked.

The leader smiled. "This information came from the town. How could it be false? They said the village head has peak-level energy stones. They also said he is accompanied by someone unknown, but I don't think that would be a problem."

The skinny man smiled. "I see. Then I cannot wait for tonight. Ah, I want to visit the brothel, and maybe I can finally ask Miss Yulin to accompany me."

The leader burst out laughing. "Ahahaha, you could, you could. I will spare some of the spirit stones for you if we get many."

"Thank you, boss," the skinny man replied.

They kept moving toward the village, soon reaching the edge of the forest where they would finally enter the village area.

However, before they could pass the forest boundary, they saw a lone man standing in their path. The man had long red hair and a youthful face.

They did not stop, as the leader was still laughing. They thought that this man was a villager.

"Die! Die! Die!" he shouted as his wolf charged straight toward the lone man. With the wolf's speed, it would be instant death for anyone who crashed into it. Moreover, the black-tailed wolf he rode was a duke-stage spiritual beast. It was powerful, and its body was truly hard.

But before the leader could crash his wolf into the lone figure, he saw the man raise his hand and suddenly sweep it toward him.

Before he or the others could pass the figure and understand what had happened, the leader suddenly felt his body fly off the wolf, and he felt lightness from his knees down.

"Eh?"

He felt confused about what had just happened, but then he finally saw it with his own eyes. His body was thrown from his wolf, and he saw that his wolf had been split horizontally. Blood and inner organs were thrown forward as they moved at high speed. Then he also saw his own legs from the knees down, thrown to different places.

Because the wolf's body was split from its mouth to its butt, the leader's legs were also cut from the knees down where the cut passed through his legs.

But the leader was not the only one who experienced this, as he also saw his other men suffer the same fate. Their wolves were split horizontally from mouth to butt, and their legs were also severed.

As they moved at high speed, all of them were thrown with great momentum. Many crashed into the ground and into the trees. The huge bodies of the wolves also crashed into some of the bandits who were thrown toward the trees or the ground, crushing their bodies and killing them.

"Arghhh!!!"

"Uwaaghhh! Help!"

"Arhhh!"

Sounds of pain could be heard from all the bandits as they no longer had lower legs to stand on. Blood flowed from their severed limbs, and many clutched them in agony.

The leader also felt pain from his severed legs, but he gritted his teeth and looked at his surroundings. He saw that all of his men were also experiencing the same thing as him, without exception. All the wolves were dead, which made his heart tremble.

All of them were split horizontally, and the ridiculous thing was that the trees surrounding them were fine. Not a single tree was cut.

What did that mean?

That meant the lone figure could cut many targets without harming the environment itself. Just how could that man do that? Just how masterful was his control over his technique, that he could slash many targets in an area full of trees without cutting a single tree?

He also saw that the man had only swept his hand, and that was it. He did not sense anything, and just like that, all of them were slashed.

The leader already felt sweat rolling down his face, not only from the pain he felt, but from the situation he was in. He knew that whoever the lone figure was, he would be dead if he tried to fight him.

He tried to reach the escaping talisman from the pouch on his pants, but suddenly a twig pierced his hand. The twig embedded his hand into the ground as he shouted in pain.

"Arghhh!"

Blood flowed from his hand, and as he tried to look at it, a voice came from beside him.

"Uh uh, you cannot escape yet. I have some questions for you."

The leader's heart shook, and the others near him felt the same. They looked at the lone figure, who was suddenly standing right beside the leader.

As they finally saw the man up close, they saw how handsome he was. However, at this moment, they did not admire him, but were terrified instead. They knew that after the strike just now, they had no hope of facing him. Someone who could kill many black-tailed wolves in a single strike without much difficulty was not someone they could confront.

Aldrian, who had already been waiting for their arrival, had also been observing and listening to their conversation through his domain sense. So he did not hesitate to slash them once he could see them.

"So I heard that all of you are bandits with unknown origins. May I know where you came from? Oh, before you intend to stay silent or lie—"

Aldrian then made another sweeping motion with his hand, and a split second later, one of the bandits near him, the robed duke stage cultivator, was split from his head to his anus.

The others who saw this felt terrified and looked at Aldrian again with trembling eyes.

"I can sense your lies, and if you are determined to keep silent, I don't mind. However, if any of you answer my questions, I will let all of you live. If no one answers, then all of you will die. Look at how generous I am to you," Aldrian said with a smile.

"Now let me repeat my question, who are you? Where did you come from?"

"We were prisoners from Alkemon Prison, and we were freed by someone from Abrum Town, but we never knew their identity," the leader quickly answered.

Aldrian did not know where Alkemon Prison was, but at least he had obtained some information.

"You said that you were freed from the prison by someone from Abrug Town. Does this also have a connection to you becoming bandits in this area? And I heard that you received information from the town regarding the village head. Do you bandits have connections inside the town? Do you have informants or connections with the officials?" Aldrian asked.

"Yes, yes. The ones who freed us asked us to become bandits in this area. They were the ones who provided us with many things, including these wolves. We could become bandits freely without any trouble because of them," the leader quickly answered.

"Sometimes, we received information or orders from an unknown source inside the town, but after some time, we suspected that it came from the authorities of the town itself. We just did what we were ordered to do."

Aldrian nodded in understanding. Comparing this with the complaints from the villagers, he could finally piece together most of the puzzle, and he already had a suspect he needed to meet later regarding this matter.

"Thank you for the information. Like I said, I will let you live," Aldrian said as he turned and walked away.

The remaining bandits, seeing this, felt relief. But then they saw Aldrian turn his head toward them and show a smile.

"I will let you live for five seconds," he said, which made their eyes widen.

"YOU—"

Crack!

The leader wanted to curse, but before he could, his body was suddenly crushed by heavy gravity.

All of the bandits' bodies looked as if they had been stomped on by a giant, flattened down to their inner organs. Blood splattered everywhere, staining the forest with the color and smell of blood.

After that, Aldrian created a spatial crack and teleported all the bodies, whether bandits or wolves, into it before closing it. The only thing that remained was the bloodstains, which the villagers could clean later.

Aldrian then disappeared from the place that had just become a scene of carnage.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1024 - 1024: Guiding Them

[1,730 words]

Aldrian returned to the gathered villagers. They were still waiting for him, and the moment they saw his figure appear, they sighed in relief.

"Are you okay, young master?" the village head asked.

Aldrian nodded. "I'm alright. Is that bandit group the only one that harasses the village?"

The village head nodded. "Yes, young master. They are the only ones that always come to the village. I have never heard of any bandit group in nearby villages, so I think they were the only ones in this region."

"I see. Then you don't have to worry about the bandits anymore," Aldrian said, then looked at the other villagers.

"You don't have to worry about them anymore, as they will not come to disturb your lives again. You can live more comfortably now. I already took care of them."

The villagers felt glad as their eyes glimmered, and one by one, they bowed to him.

"Thank you, young master."

"Thank you, young master, for helping us."

The villagers expressed their gratitude, which made Aldrian smile. "Alright, alright, I get it. Now there is another thing that I need to tell you."

The villagers focused their attention on Aldrian, wondering what he would say.

"As I have already stayed in this place for a few days, I think it is time for me to finally depart and continue my journey," Aldrian said, which made the village head sighed. He knew that sooner or later, this would happen.

In the end, Aldrian had his own business, and he only happened to have circumstances that made him stay in this village for a while. The village head could not help but feel sad that Aldrian would already be leaving the village after all he had done for his family.

Valuk felt the same way. Although Aldrian had not stayed in their village for long, seeing how happy Ella was beside Aldrian made him feel that it was a pity for him to leave so soon.

He wanted Aldrian to stay longer so that he could give Ella happiness for a much longer time. But he understood that Aldrian had his own business, so he could not just ask him to stay longer.

"I will ask you something. Do you want to be strong?" Aldrian suddenly asked, which made the villagers stunned. They did not fully understand Aldrian's question.

"Do you want to be strong so that you are not powerless against something like those bandits?" Aldrian continued, which made the villagers finally understand.

Their faces showed determination, and many of them gritted their teeth.

"We want to be strong, young master! We don't want to be powerless and weak!" one of the villagers shouted.

"Yes, we don't want to feel weak. We want to be able to fight!" another shouted.

One by one, the villagers shouted their determination to become strong. They did not want the feeling of weakness and humiliation that they had experienced in the past because of various circumstances.

Hearing their determination, Aldrian smiled and nodded.

"I heard all of you. That's why, before I leave, I will leave something to you," Aldrian continued, and suddenly, a scroll appeared in his grasp. He lifted it so all the villagers could see it.

"This is a cultivation technique that I created myself. I will spread this cultivation technique to you so that you can grow stronger and defend yourselves when trouble arises. You will not have to be so powerless like in the past."

"The technique that I created will make you stronger quickly, and it can be cultivated by anyone without exception, no matter their talent. Everyone, as long as they have normal dantian and meridians, can cultivate this."

Hearing that, the villagers were astonished. Aldrian was going to spread a cultivation technique freely? The villagers knew that cultivation techniques were not something easily shared.

Although there were some cultivation techniques that were sold to many people, the prices were so high that there was no way any of the villagers here could afford them.

Now Aldrian wanted to spread a cultivation technique, one that could be cultivated by anyone without exception?

"For those who already cultivate using a different cultivation technique, you can change to this cultivation technique directly. You don't have to worry about your cultivation foundation. This cultivation technique will not destroy your foundation. Once you cultivate it, it will slowly change your current foundation and strengthen it without making you lose your cultivation."

Hearing that, those who had already become cultivators widened their eyes in shock. They were the ones who knew the basic knowledge of cultivation technique, so they understood how ridiculous it sounded.

They had never heard of a cultivation technique that could be cultivated without destroying the foundation of a previous cultivation technique entirely.

This was the first time they had heard of such a thing, which made them wonder whether what Aldrian said was true.

There was only one way to prove it.

"Now, please spread the scrolls and gather in the open field. I will guide you until you can cultivate on your own," Aldrian said as he began to hand the scrolls to the villagers.

He teleported a large number of scrolls from his palace to this place and had the villagers take them one by one. Aldrian observed the villagers as they received the scrolls.

Besides allowing the villagers to defend themselves, there was another reason why he spread his cultivation technique here. That was to spread his influence and spread faith in him.

What he gave to the villagers was the same cultivation technique that he had spread to those who believed in him as a god.

Although this cultivation technique was different from the one he had spread among his troops and was an "inferior" version of it, it was already much greater than most cultivation techniques out there.

With this, these villagers could become much stronger than many cultivators if they were supported by abundant resources. However, even without abundant resources, this technique was enough to ensure that they would not be entirely powerless.

After the villagers got their shares, they moved to the vast field. Those who had still been hiding in their houses also began to come out to see what had happened. They

received their shares of the cultivation technique as well and followed the others to the field.

The children, who were curious, also followed, and that included Ella.

After all the villagers gathered in the field, Aldrian gave them time to read the cultivation technique.

However, Aldrian facepalmed when he finally realized that not all of the villagers could read!

In the end, he first needed to transfer the knowledge of how to read directly into their memories, and then guide them step by step.

After all of the villagers could read and had finished reading the first chapter of the cultivation technique, Aldrian then guided them to cultivate. The children watched from the side as they saw their families cultivate seriously for the first time.

Aldrian took hours to guide the villagers, and by the time he was done, the sun had already set. The moment the villagers opened their eyes from meditation, they could feel the changes in their bodies.

Those who had been normal mortals just a few hours ago had already become cultivators at beginner stage.

The villagers were truly shocked. They felt refreshed and more powerful than ever. Even the elderly could feel the difference, as they felt stronger and looked younger. Black, impure substances seeped out from their skin, exuding a foul stench.

Those who had already been cultivators could also feel the changes within themselves, which left them astonished.

This cultivation technique was truly marvelous. They could feel their old cultivation foundation being overlapped by a new one, and it was much stronger.

They were truly amazed by it.

However, Aldrian was still not done. He then gave each family a thousand peak level energy stones, which could be used for daily living or as cultivation resources. If they used them properly, they could reach the duke stage or even the grand duke stage.

The villagers felt overwhelmed and quickly kowtowed to Aldrian. They truly felt grateful to him for giving them so much. Aldrian could feel faith energy beginning to flow from the villagers.

After thanking Aldrian, they quickly returned to their homes or went to the nearby river to clean themselves.

Aldrian felt glad that he could help them while also gaining faith energy here.

However, at this moment, Aldrian did not know that this act of helping the villagers would truly change the fate of this village and its people in the future.

Two days later, when the sun had already risen from the eastern horizon, Aldrian stood in front of many villagers as he prepared to leave the village. Ella, who was among the villagers sending him off, looked very sad and on the verge of crying.

Aldrian smiled at her and gently stroked her head.

"Ella, you must grow into a strong woman. You need to grow strong so you can protect Grandpa and so you can fly on your own. Ella wants to fly on her own, right?" he said softly.

Ella nodded and then looked at Aldrian's face with watery eyes. "Big brother, will we meet again?" she asked.

"Big brother will meet Ella again if Ella grows stronger," Aldrian replied.

Hearing that, Ella wiped her tears and nodded. "Ella will grow stronger!" she said with full determination, though her tears flowed again.

Aldrian smiled, ruffled her hair, and then looked at Valuk.

"Thank you for taking care of me all this time, Sir Valuk," Aldrian said with a slight bow.

"Please don't bow to me, young master. You have already done so many things for us. I would feel really bad if you bowed to me," Valuk said.

"There is no shame in bowing, and what you did for me is much greater than what I gave to you or the village," Aldrian replied.

Valuk sighed, and Aldrian then looked at the village head and his family.

"Thank you for letting me stay, Village Head. I hope you and your family live a happy life."

"Thank you, young master, for all the things that you have done for us, for my family, and for this village. We will never forget your kindness," the village head replied.

Aldrian nodded with a smile.

"Then I'm going—" As he was about to depart, he suddenly sensed a group of people entering his domain and approaching the village.

The group was riding horned horses, and they were wearing armor bearing the symbol of the troops of Abrug Town.

Sensing this, Aldrian raised his eyebrows. He wondered why these people were approaching the village.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1025 - 1025: Trying to Intimidate

[1,535 words]

The group of troops bearing the symbol of Abrug Town's forces was approaching from the main road that connected the village to the town. The one leading them was a king stage cultivator.

Aldrian wondered why this group was approaching the village at this moment.

"Young master, is there something wrong?" the village head asked when he saw Aldrian fall silent.

Aldrian then looked at the village head.

"Village head, I can sense a group of people wearing armor bearing the symbol of Abrug Town's troops, just like the guards at the town's gate, approaching along the main road. The one leading them is a king stage cultivator."

The village head and other villagers widened their eyes.

"The symbol of Abrug Town's troops? They must be from the town's authority," the village head replied and facepalmed.

"They might have come to collect the war taxes. I forgot that today is the day they collect taxes."

The others showed irritated expressions.

"The war taxes?" Aldrian said.

"Yes, young master. Since the war with the devils started, the authority of the town has been applying war taxes to all the villages near Abrum. In the name of supporting the war, they collect not only energy stones but also our harvest and livestock," the village head continued.

"Those bastards only know how to collect taxes but not how to protect us. They take most of our harvest and livestock, leaving us with very little, which forces us to make the journey to the town to buy even food that we should be able to produce ourselves," one of the villagers commented, and the others agreed with him.

Aldrian nodded in understanding, and this also answered one of his questions.

Why would the villagers buy food like rice almost every day when they could produce their own food? From what he had seen, the villagers here were capable of processing the harvest from their farms by themselves.

Now it made sense. The war taxes left them with very little, making their lives much more difficult. Their stock was not enough, and they had to buy expensive food in the town.

Aldrian knew that it was the right of the territorial authority to implement such laws during a war.

However, the authority should understand the situation of its citizens and their hardships. They could not simply seize taxes when these people were already struggling, as if they did not care about their lives.

Moreover, the authorities here did not even do their job of protecting the citizens within their supposed area of responsibility.

They did nothing when there were bandits, and it was suspected that the bandits had connections with them. They failed to do their duty and instead only made the lives of the citizens more difficult with their tricks.

This kind of authority did not deserve to lead or collect taxes.

"I see. Well then, lucky me. I happen to have some business with them. This makes things easier, since they are coming here themselves," Aldrian said, which left the others confused.

"For all of you, you can go back to your own houses. Do not think about the taxes and just continue your activities for today," he added as he looked toward the villagers.

"Young master, you have already done so much for us. We feel bad that you have to take care of this problem as well. Moreover, this is the authority of the town, which has connections to the Beruin family," the village head said.

"Yes, young master. We do not want you to get into trouble with the Beruin family. They are truly an influential family," one of the villagers said.

"Young master, I know you are strong, but the Beruin family is a behemoth existence with great influence in this kingdom. We do not want you to run into trouble with them," Valuk also said.

Seeing their worries, Aldrian smiled. "Thank you for your concern, but you don't need to worry. I already have plans for them," he said as he then looked toward the main road.

"The behemoth existence? A noble family? Well, too bad. I don't care about something like that."

After waiting for a while, the group from the town finally arrived. They also brought several carriages, which Aldrian thought were used to transport the taxes.

The one leading them was a blond-haired middle-aged man with king stage cultivation. The moment they arrived at the boundary of the village, the blond-haired man stopped his horse, followed by his convoy.

The leader seemed confused when he saw the villagers gathered together, and then he noticed a stranger among them.

He narrowed his eyes. He could not sense any cultivation from this man, but the man might be hiding his cultivation.

'Is this the man mentioned in the report?' he thought.

"Welcome to Arsun Village, Sir Henrik," the village head greeted the leader.

The leader looked at the village head. "Village Head Roka, we have come to collect the war taxes. We hope that you will cooperate with us and allow my troops to inspect your village. Additionally, with the development of the war, the town lord has ordered conscription. We will select men who are still able to fight to join the troops in the war against the devils."

Hearing that, the villagers were shocked. Aldrian also frowned.

Conscription? The people of this village?

That would be sending them to their deaths!

The men of this village were mostly ordinary mortals, and these people wanted to send them to fight in a war against the devils?

There was no other purpose.

They would be nothing more than cannon fodder. They would surely end up dead!

"Sir Henrik, but most of our men here are mortals without cultivation. How are they supposed to fight the devils?" the village head asked reluctantly.

"That will be decided by the commander of the troops. How you fight is not your concern. This is compulsory, and if you don't obey, there will be punishment," Henrik replied with mocking expression.

"You don't need to know much and just obey. Village head Rokan, you can stay here since your abilities are still needed, but if you keep complaining, you might as well join the troops," he added.

The villagers gritted their teeth, but none of them said anything. This scene made Henrik smirk.

'Yes, you should just stay silent and not bark. That would make our work easier,' he thought, then looked at Aldrian.

"You, who are you? Where do you come from?" he asked.

Aldrian did not answer immediately. He looked at Henrik with a calm gaze instead, a gaze that made Henrik feel uncomfortable.

Henrik could not help but feel that something was wrong, and his expression turned angry.

"I am asking you a question," he said once again, and this time he released his aura. The pressure made the villagers tremble with fear, even though they were not the target. The aura of a king stage cultivator was too much for the villagers here.

To them, it felt as if they were facing a higher existence. Like a god.

The aura itself was focused only on Aldrian, as Henrik wanted to intimidate him.

He wanted to put Aldrian in his place.

However, he was stunned when he saw that Aldrian's expression did not change. In fact, it looked as if Aldrian did not feel anything at all. It was as if his aura was nothing more than a breeze of wind to him.

Seeing this as a challenge, Henrik wanted to increase the pressure.

However, he then saw Aldrian wave his hand softly, as if he were chasing away a fly.

Instantly, all of the aura's pressure disappeared, allowing the villagers to breathe in relief again.

Henrik widened his eyes in shock, and before he could say anything, Aldrian had already spoken.

"It's truly unbecoming for a king stage cultivator to show intimidation in front of mortals. Do you feel powerful by showing your might here?"

Henrik finally understood that Aldrian was not someone simple and felt wary. His expression turned serious as he ignored Aldrian's mocking question.

"Who are you? State your identity. Even if you are someone powerful, you are still inside the territory of the Beruin family. There are rules that you must obey," he said.

"Obeying rules, huh? That still depends on whether I think they are worth obeying," Aldrian replied.

"Making the lives of common people difficult while you don't even do your job? Why should I obey rules made by authorities like that?"

Henrik gritted his teeth and then he shouted to his troops, "Prepare for—"

"You had better watch your next move. Once you point your sword at me, you will not even realize the moment your soul enters the underworld. I don't care about the consequences, and if you want to try me, go ahead," Aldrian said in a calm yet threatening tone.

Henrik's words stuck in his throat as his instincts screamed danger.

If he really pointed his sword, he might die!

He did not know if Aldrian was bluffing or not, but looking at the current situation, his life was already at a crossroads.

He was almost certain that Aldrian was far stronger than him, and the first victim if he made the wrong choice would be himself.

Would he bet that Aldrian was only bluffing about the consequences?

He didn't want to gamble with his life.

As he was still confused about what he should do, he then heard Aldrian speak again.

"Bring me to your lord. I would like to speak with your lord."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1026 - 1026: Leaving the Village

[1,660 words]

"Bring me to your lord. I would like to speak with your lord." Aldrian said.

Henrik was stunned, but Aldrian continued.

"You don't have any choice in this matter either. Either you let me see your lord, or I will make this matter bigger, which will leave your lord with no choice but to see me. Maybe I will have to kill you and your troops here for your lord to see me?"

"Oh, and also, you cannot touch this village for any reason. This is my place to stay for the past few days, after all."

Henrik gritted his teeth as he truly felt that this person was insane. Aldrian's expression and demeanor showed no fear toward the Beruin family at all.

Who is this person? How could he be so bold?

He could not sense this man's cultivation, which made his heart unsettled. What if this man was actually a cultivator at the Immortal Transition Realm, or worse, at the Pseudo Immortal Stage?

That would explain why this man seemed fearless. But where did he come from?

The troops behind Henrik felt humiliated and could only grit their teeth, holding back their anger. They could see that their commander was powerless and being ordered around by this man, while the man showed no fear toward their forces.

In a normal situation, they would have killed the man and been done with it.

However, they endured the humiliation, understanding that this man was not simple. The fact that he could withstand the aura of a King Stage cultivator and even break it so easily meant that he was extremely strong.

They needed to be careful of this unknown and crazy man.

After a few moments of thought, Henrik finally made a decision.

"Alright. I will bring you to my lord."

Aldrian finally showed a smile and clapped once. "Good. I like sensible people, so I do not have to choose the hard way."

He then looked at the village head and the others.

"I will depart. Take care."

The village head nodded. "You too, young master. Please be careful on your journey."

Aldrian nodded before walking toward one of the special carriages, a goods carriage covered with a roof and white tarpaulin, and sat inside it.

Henrik, who was watching Aldrian enter the carriage, then turned to look at his vice commander beside him.

"I want you to leave a few troops here so—"

"Uh, uh, Henrik. Henrik, don't play any tricks behind me. Like I said, do not touch this village. Was my warning not enough for you?"

Henrik, who was in the middle of a voice transmission, was interrupted by Aldrian, which shocked him. Could that man read other people's minds or what?

"It looks like I need to show you something to make you understand."

Suddenly, Henrik felt his surroundings change, and it horrified him. He saw all of his troops dead. Blood was everywhere, and the scene looked like a place of carnage. He then saw his own corpse beneath him, eyes wide open, as if he had just experienced something horrifying and full of despair.

He was surrounded by death, and the intense killing intent around him nearly caused his mind to collapse instantly.

However, his vision suddenly returned to reality, and he found himself looking at his still living troops. He gasped for breath as his hands trembled. He looked down at his own body. Sweat had already rolled down his face, and his heart was pounding violently.

The vision just now had been far too real. It felt like he had returned from another life and been given a second chance. He felt that if he had remained in that vision for even a little longer, he might have died as well.

Henrik's eyes trembled as he looked toward the carriage where Aldrian was sitting.

'Dangerous. It is too dangerous. He is truly dangerous,' he thought.

'Sir, what are the troops we were going to leave here supposed to do?' his vice commander's voice transmission came through, pulling him out of his fear.

'No, I retract that order. Let us go back. Don't leave anyone behind. Don't touch this village for now,' he replied before looking at his other troops.

"Move. We are going back to the town!" he shouted.

The others obeyed and turned around, heading back toward the town.

As they left, Aldrian saw the villagers still standing there, looking in his direction. He smiled at them and waved his hand, and the villagers finally waved back with smiles.

They had truly seen how Aldrian had easily solved their village's problem. Commander Henrik, the mighty existence for them, seemed unable to do anything other than obey Aldrian.

They did not know what Henrik had experienced during that short conversation with Aldrian, so they did not know why he chose to retreat. The villagers only thought that Henrik did not want to cause trouble with Aldrian.

'Good luck, young master. I hope we meet again in the future,' Valuk thought as he watched Aldrian grow farther away.

He then looked at his granddaughter, who was still waving toward Aldrian, and gently stroked her head.

Aldrian's journey to the town did not encounter any problems. They managed to return within six hours, even though they were moving in a convoy and had several carriages with them. As the convoy reached the town gate, the troops stationed there did not stop them.

They continued forward, and the people on the road made way for them. Despite the crowded streets, the convoy was able to keep moving.

Their destination was a large mansion located on the other side of the town. The mansion was where the town lord resided.

After another hour of travel, they finally arrived in front of the mansion. The ones who entered the mansion grounds were Aldrian's carriage and Henrik on his horse. Henrik himself guided Aldrian's carriage until it stopped in front of the main door.

Of course, this caused some of the mansion's guards and staff to raise their eyebrows, wondering why Commander Henrik was entering the mansion grounds with a goods carriage behind him. Usually, goods carriages would go through the back gate instead of the front gate.

Henrik then hopped off his horse and spoke to the butler who came to him. Aldrian could clearly hear their conversation, which was meant to notify the town lord of his visit.

After speaking with the butler, Henrik walked toward Aldrian.

"Please wait inside the mansion, uhm, uh, young master. I will go and meet my lord. However, please do not blame me if he does not wish to meet you," he said in a polite manner.

Aldrian did not say anything and stepped down from the carriage. A butler was already waiting for him in front of the main doors.

The butler wondered who Aldrian was, considering how young he appeared. Seeing the way Commander Henrik treated him, the butler believed that Aldrian's identity was far from simple.

He then led Aldrian to a guest room, where he would wait for the town lord to arrive.

On the other side of the mansion, Henrik was on his way to the town lord's room with a butler escorting him. When he arrived in front of the room, the butler knocked on the door before speaking.

"My lord, Commander Henrik has returned and wishes to see you."

"Come in," a man's voice came from inside.

The butler nodded and opened the door for Henrik to enter. Once Henrik stepped inside, he saw a tall, fat middle aged man with neatly kept brown hair. A cigar rested in the man's hand, and he released a stream of smoke from his mouth, clearly enjoying his time smoking.

At the sight of the man, sweat rolled down Henrik's forehead and he swallowed hard. This was his lord and the highest authority of the town. The town lord of Abrum Town, Agerus Emilan.

"I did not expect you to return this quickly. I assume there was a problem. What happened?" the town lord asked in an indifferent tone.

Henrik took a deep breath and nodded. "Yes, my lord. The thing is..." He then began explaining Aldrian's existence and how he had decided to retreat while bringing Aldrian here.

After hearing the explanation, the town lord placed the cigar onto the ashtray. Seeing the fear still visible on Henrik's face as he recounted what had happened between him and Aldrian, he understood that Aldrian was not simple.

"I see. So the one who accompanied Rokan might be someone powerful, someone who did not care going against the Beruin family." The town lord then snorted.

"What an arrogant man. Does he think that just because he is powerful, he can do whatever he wants? He will regret going against the Beruin family." He then stood up and began to walk.

"Lead me to him," he said.

"Yes, my lord," Henrik answered quickly. They then walked toward the guest room where Aldrian was already waiting.

After a few minutes, they finally arrived, and Henrik opened the door for the town lord.

The town lord saw Aldrian quietly drinking his tea. He was quite surprised by how young Aldrian looked, especially considering that he seemed far more powerful than Henrik.

However, the town lord quickly showed a displeased expression and approached him.

"I heard that you—"

Before he could finish his words, his body was suddenly pulled toward Aldrian at terrifying speed. The moment he reached him, Aldrian grasped the town lord's head and smashed it into the table in front of him, destroying it instantly.

Henrik, who saw everything, was truly shocked. Before he could do anything, he saw Aldrian flick a finger toward him from where he sat, and his body was instantly thrown out of the room through the still open door.

After Henrik was thrown out, the door closed by itself. The nearby guards, who had heard the commotion, immediately rushed toward him.

Inside the room, Aldrian was still holding the teacup in his left hand while gripping the town lord's head by the hair with his right. The town lord's face was already bloodied, blood flowing from his nose and lips, as Aldrian forced his face to look at him.

"There are a few things I want to say to you," Aldrian said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1027 - 1027: I Heard Enough

[1,640 words]

The town lord did not expect to be treated this way. Ignoring Aldrian's words, he tried to attack Aldrian.

"Bastard!" he roared.

His aura at middle emperor stage flared as he unleashed his palm technique. His palm exuded scorching flames that caused the room temperature to spike instantly, burning the surrounding furniture.

His target was Aldrian's face.

The town lord thought it would be a direct hit given how close they were. Moreover, both of Aldrian's hands were occupied. One was grabbing his head, while the other held a cup of tea.

But before his palm could touch Aldrian's face, it abruptly stopped. It was as if something was holding his wrist.

At that moment, Aldrian was using his spatial manipulation to grab the town lord's wrist.

The town lord kept pushing his palm, gritting his teeth, but it did not move even an inch. Seeing that Aldrian showed no disturbance despite the chaos only made the town lord more furious.

"Raagghhhh!" he roared as he continued to force his palm forward. The flames in his palm intensified, making even the space begin to bend.

However, Aldrian did not change his expression and continued to look at the town lord calmly.

The only things still in perfect condition in the room were Aldrian himself, the cup of tea in his hand, and the sofa where he sat. It was as if something invisible was protecting them.

As the town lord continued to push with all his strength, he felt something grip his wrist tightly before—

Crack!

"Aaargh!!!"

His wrist bone crushed, and his hand bent upward. His scream, full of pain, could be heard outside the room, which at this moment was already surrounded by guards. Henrik and the guards had already tried to breach the door. However, as if something invisible was protecting it, the door could not be opened or destroyed.

"A kind of spatial barrier is protecting the door. We cannot destroy it!" one of the guards commented.

Henrik gritted his teeth.

As he thought, Aldrian was truly bad news, and to think that he did not hesitate to attack the town lord the moment he met him.

Hearing the scream full of pain from their lord only fueled their panic as they continued trying to breach the room. The room was already surrounded from various directions.

Inside the room, the town lord, who had already given up trying to attack Aldrian, grimaced in pain as he looked at Aldrian with fear.

"Why... are you doing this? Did we have some misunderstanding somewhere?" he asked as he endured the pain in his destroyed wrist.

Aldrian sipped the tea once before he replied.

"No, not at all. It is the first time we have met, and I have not been here long, so I did not know you."

Hearing that, the town lord gritted his teeth, not only because of the pain but also because he truly wanted to shout.

Then why are you attacking me?!

"Do you have any connection to those bandits, the ones riding the black-tailed wolf?" Aldrian suddenly asked, making the town lord's heart tremble.

He had received a report that those bandits went to Arsun Village two days ago by the order of his underling. It was said that some witnesses saw the village head Rokan possessing peak-level energy stones.

The village head was accompanied by someone, but he did not care about that.

What he cared about was only the result.

He simply let his men do the job, to take the 'excessive' wealth from those commoners.

However, he later received a report that they had lost contact with the bandits for more than twenty-four hours, which made him feel unsettled.

He thought that something might have happened to those bandits, and it looked like it was true. They might already be dead at the hands of this man who was said to be the one accompanying the village head.

Does this man know something from those bandits?

No, it can't be!

There was no proof of their direct connection. Even if those bandits could guess the connection to the town's official that had always been giving them orders and information, they would not have proof that directly pointed to him!

Aldrian smiled at the town lord. "It looks like it's true. You have a connection with those bandits."

The town lord's heart trembled as he looked at the smile, the smile that clearly showed, 'I got you.'

He must not admit his connection with those bandits!

"What are you talking about? I don't understand," he said.

Without saying anything, Aldrian suddenly used his blood laws. He cast a blood curse on the town lord, which made him feel pain across his entire body.

Blood started to flow from all of his orifices, and the town lord felt extreme pain that he had never felt before. It only took a few seconds before the town lord gave up.

"I... have... a connection... please... stop."

Aldrian stopped the blood curse and let the town lord catch his breath.

"I'm listening. So you are the one who released those criminals and turned them into bandits? You then let them roam your territory to extort or rob those commoners and passing merchants, correct?" Aldrian asked.

"Yes...but I...released those criminals also... with the approval...of the Beruin family...as they are from the prison...under their management," the town lord answered painfully.

"Why would you do that? If you want to extort someone for wealth, you could extort those wealthy merchants. Why make things difficult for those villagers who are already struggling to live? Even to the point of wanting to take a few peak level energy stones from them," Aldrian asked.

The town lord looked hesitant to answer, which made Aldrian's grip on his head tighten.

"It's because of desperate measures. I...prepared for the future when we have to escape this world because the devils keep pushing us back! I gathered as much...wealth as possible in a short time for...my future, no matter the source." the town lord quickly answered.

"To keep my image, I had to use another hand that was entirely outside my force to do the dirty work!"

Aldrian nodded. "I see. So this was your personal order then?"

"Although, although this was my personal order, the Beruin family also tacitly approved my methods because there is no way they did not know what I was doing here. The fact that they did nothing means they allowed it," the town lord answered.

"So I suppose you also took benefits from the war taxes? And you were also the one who ordered the conscription?" Aldrian asked again.

The town lord hesitantly nodded, but then he quickly clarified.

"Yes, I did take some benefits from the taxes, but regarding the conscription, it came from the Beruin family. I only did what was ordered by the Beruin family, to conscript those normal mortals without cultivation."

Aldrian could not help but find the Beruin family more and more infuriating. He had actually left himself a small benefit of the doubt regarding the Beruin family's involvement.

He thought that the entire situation in the village or in this town might have been the personal decision of the town's authority without the Beruin family's knowledge.

With the town lord's confession, he no longer needed to keep any good feelings toward the Beruin family.

"So you must also know about the Crimson Flame mushroom, right? Did the situation of Village Head Roka come from the man called Renfil, or did it also come from the Beruin family?" Aldrian asked.

"That also came from the Beruin family. They ordered the Treasure Pavilion branch here to gain as much profit as possible from Village Head Roka."

Aldrian took a deep breath and released it.

"One last question. What are you going to do with the people you caught inside the dungeon under your mansion? I can sense that many of them are refugees who came to the town a few days ago," he asked.

The town lord widened his eyes in shock. How could he know about the dungeon, and even more so, about the people inside it?

There were only a few people who knew about the refugees who had become prisoners in his dungeon.

Did Henrik tell this man?

No, he did not think so. There was no reason for Henrik to tell this man about the dungeon.

So how did this man know about it?

Hearing no answer, Aldrian tightened his grip again, which made the town lord answer, albeit hesitantly.

"They... they are the product. I... I... sold them as slaves to others—"

"Let me guess. You framed those refugees for crimes they did not commit, or framed them under nonsense laws so you could catch them?" Aldrian cut off the town lord's words, making the town lord freeze before he hesitantly nodded.

"Yes—"

"Alright, I heard enough," Aldrian said before he forcefully smashed the town lord's head into the floor, making even the ground tremble.

The rumbling sound from the room could be heard outside, which made Henrik and the guards work even harder to breach it.

Aldrian, who had just smashed the town lord's head, stood up and looked at what he had done. The floor was destroyed, and the town lord's head was crushed like a smashed watermelon, killing him instantly.

Strangely, there was no blood splashed onto Aldrian's clothes. He was still clean, except for the hand he had used to grab the town lord's head, which was stained with blood.

He wiped his hand with a napkin that he had already prepared before throwing it aside.

He then picked up the floating cup of tea and sipped it one last time before he disappeared. A second after he vanished, the doors to the room could be opened and the guards rushed in.

They saw the room already in ruins, but their attention was instantly drawn to the town lord's body.

Henrik, who was also among the first to enter the room, felt horrified as he saw the condition of his lord. His head was completely destroyed, and he could not be more dead.

'That man truly dared to kill Lord Agerus,' Henrik thought.

'This is really bad. I have to notify the Beruin family!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1028 - 1028: Beruin Family's Elite Brigade

[1,699 words]

Aldrian appeared on one of the crowded streets and entered one of the nearest inns from the mansion. He reserved one room for himself before entering it and sat down to meditate.

At this moment, he was waiting for someone to come.

A few hours later, the crowded street opened a path once again for another convoy that came out from the town's warp gate. This time, it truly astonished many people. The line of knights with strong auras created an amazing spectacle, and they came from the force that had become the highest authority of this entire region.

The moment they saw the symbol of one of the Beruin family's elite brigades on the waving flags and on their armor, they knew that something unusual had happened.

"Isn't that Beruin's Lion Brigade? Why are they here? Aren't they tasked at the frontline?" one of the spectators said.

"Yes, this is truly strange. They were supposed to be in the middle of the war at the frontline. The fact that they are here means that something unusual has happened," another replied.

"Don't tell me there might be devils near us? I heard that the devils are infiltrators, and they have infiltrated many parts of our territories and created destruction," another commented.

"Ugh, hearing that possibility gives me goosebumps. It looks like this place is no longer safe."

The people here had never seen the Beruin family send this kind of force to this small town before, so it made sense that many were talking about it.

As the people opened the path for them, the knights from the Beruin family kept moving forward toward the direction of the town lord's mansion. They were led by an old man with short white hair and a beard. His expression looked fierce, and even his stature was intimidating. He was tall and looked strong.

He had the most impressive cultivation here, at low pseudo immortal establishment stage, making him the strongest being in the town if Aldrian was not here.

Behind him was another strong cultivator at peak pseudo-immortal foundation stage. A man with a youthful face and long brown hair, making him look heroic. Despite his young appearance, he was the second strongest in this line of troops after the leader.

"Sir Kuartin, are there really devils in this place? This place is too weak for the devils to put their attention on," the young man asked the leader.

Kuartin kept walking as he spoke. "I don't know, but from the report that I heard, there is a huge possibility that a devil has appeared in this place and killed the town's lord. There should be no one who dares to mess with our family, yet there is someone who did so. That is why the patriarch ordered our brigade to investigate this place despite us being positioned at the frontline."

"Also, this place is not entirely worthless. This place is the source of the Crimson Flame Mushrooms, so the devils might want to create chaos here. Those devils are truly clever and will attack some places with purpose. Do not even think of underestimating their cleverness, Louis, or we will be outsmarted by them," he added.

Louis nodded with a smile. "Yes, sir."

As their troops kept approaching the mansion, Aldrian had already stopped his meditation and looked outside the window that overlooked the main street.

He could finally see the line of troops, and he could not help but feel impressed by how seriously the Beruin family was taking this matter.

He did not expect the Beruin family to send such a strong line of troops to investigate the death of the town lord. From what he heard from the conversation of the apparent leader of these troops through his domain sense, the Beruin family seemed to have mistaken him for a devil.

That was why the Beruin family sent these troops that looked like they had just come from the frontline.

However, this was better for him. With the Beruin family sending these strong troops, he could make this matter even bigger. He wanted the Beruin family to know that what happened here was not something they could contain.

He wanted countless people to know how the vassal of the Beruin family managed this town. He wanted others to know how the Beruin family was treating their own people.

If he wanted to make sure that no one like the town lord would appear again, if he wanted the Beruin family to stop doing what they were doing, then he needed to make the matter in this town big and show them that they could not do whatever they wanted without punishment.

There would be consequences. There would be karma.

After a while, the Lion Brigade arrived at the town lord's mansion, and they were greeted by Henrik. He truly did not expect the Beruin family to send one of the strongest knights they had to this place.

However, Henrik felt relieved upon seeing the Lion Brigade, even its leader, Kuartin, had come.

"Sir Kuartin, welcome to the town lord's mansion," Henrik greeted, which was responded to with a nod from Kuartin.

"Let's get straight to the point. Tell me what happened and bring me to the town lord's corpse," he said.

"Ah, yes. Please, this way," Henrik said.

Kuartin ordered his troops to guard the entire mansion while he and Louis entered it. As they walked toward the room where the corpse was, Henrik told Kuartin what had happened.

He explained how he met Aldrian and decided to bring him to this place. As he recounted everything, Kuartin's expression turned furious.

"To think that you invited an enemy into your own lord's mansion. If that man insulted your pride, then you should have died with honor defending it. What a coward, obeying the order of that man which brought the death of your lord," he berated angrily.

Henrik could not fight back and could only listen silently. He inwardly gritted his teeth.

The hell with pride or whatever. He was a man who valued his own life the most. Fight that monster?

Absolutely not.

"My apologies, Sir Kuartin. This is my fault for not being brave enough to face that man. I am willing to receive my punishment," he said with his head lowered.

Kuartin snorted. "You might end up dead this time because of your cowardice. Moreover, there is the possibility that the man you talked about is a devil."

Henrik widened his eyes.

"What? A devil? Impossible! How could that be? I did not sense any devil aura from that man. Not even a bit," he said in astonishment.

"The devils are cunning. They can disguise themselves as normal cultivators and walk among us. That is also why they have been able to infiltrate deep inside many territories of other powers. At one time, I found someone from whom I did not sense even a little bit of devil energy, yet he was actually a disguised devil," Kuartin said.

"They are using an unknown method, which is truly troublesome for us. If it is true that the man you talked about is a devil, then you will die a horrible death," he added with a cold gaze.

Henrik's heart turned cold. So that was why the Beruin family sent the Lion Brigade.

They suspected that the man he brought was a devil.

If that was the case, he knew that once it was proven, he would end up dead, and not in a good way.

If there was no devil here, then he might still have a chance to live.

However, if that man was actually a devil, then it changed everything. He would be seen as the person who brought the devil into their base. Not only a coward, but also someone who obeyed a devil's order. Even after his death, his name would be tainted forever.

Henrik's face turned pale.

His life was truly over after this.

Before they realized it, they had already arrived at the room where the town lord's corpse was. The corpse had not been moved from the room where he was killed, and the room itself was not touched much, so when they entered, they still saw the destroyed room.

Kuartin observed the room for a moment.

"There is remnant energy everywhere, but it is from one person only," he said.

"This is the town lord's remnant energy, Sir Kuartin. From the remnant energy, it only shows that the town lord was the only one who unleashed a technique, which made the room like this. We did not sense any other energy, which means that the town lord was killed without the other party using any technique," Henrik said.

Kuartin then approached the town lord's corpse, which was already covered with a white cloth. He then opened the cloth to look at the town lord's condition.

The moment he saw it, he frowned deeply.

"It is clear that his head was smashed against the floor so hard that it was crushed. The one who did it was undoubtedly many times stronger than him, considering how easily he killed the town lord without using any technique. The one who did it is most likely an Immortal Transition Realm cultivator," Kuartin said.

"Sir Kuartin, there is one thing that I do not understand," Louis suddenly said as he looked at the town lord's corpse.

"Why did the killer target only the town lord? If that person is a devil and wants to create chaos, why not just kill all the people in this mansion, basically flaunting to us that they could reach this place?" he added.

"This feels more like that person only killed the town lord as if he had a personal vengeance or something like that."

Kuartin frowned as he continued looking at the corpse.

What Louis said made sense. If that person was a devil, then he was doing things differently compared to the devil infiltrators he knew.

"That is because he deserved to die, and to make the Beruin family send someone here."

Suddenly, a man's voice resounded from their side, which shocked them. They instantly jumped to create distance and took a wary stance as they saw a man standing near them, looking at them.

They did not sense this person's presence at all!

"It's him! He is the person who killed Lord Agerus!" Henrik shouted in fear as he stumbled backward.

Hearing that, Kuartin and Louis' expressions turned solemn as they readied their swords. They prepared for battle.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1029 - 1029: Knight of Noble Family or Knight of Justice?

[1,556 words]

Kuartin and Louis took a wary stance with their swords, their expressions solemn as they faced Aldrian. Henrik said that this man was the one who killed the town lord.

To think that they did not sense his presence until he spoke himself!

Didn't that mean they could have died if that man had decided to kill them?

And to think that the man was this young. Where the hell did this man come from?

However, first they needed to make sure of the man's identity and his motive. It could determine whether this man was a devil or not.

"What do you mean he deserved death?" Kuartin asked.

Aldrian calmly looked at Kuartin. "Do you have a righteous heart, knight of the Beruin family?"

Kuartin was stunned by the sudden question and frowned.

"What are you—"

"Do you have a righteous heart?" Aldrian asked again, cutting off Kuartin's words.

Kuartin was speechless, but Louis said to him through voice transmission,

"Sir, let's attack him together. He is far too dangerous."

"Wait," Kuartin replied as he kept looking at Aldrian. He just could not help but feel that based on how he answered the question, it would decide his fate.

Looking into those calm blue eyes truly made him feel unsettled. His instincts, sharpened from many battles, warned him not to recklessly charge at this man.

Seeing that the man did not instantly attack showed that he could be reasoned with. Kuartin could take advantage of this to learn more about this killer.

"Of course I have a righteous heart. As a knight, I have the duty to enact justice," Kuartin said.

"Is that so? Between your duty as a knight of the Beruin family and a knight of justice, which weighs more in your heart?" Aldrian asked again.

Kuartin stayed silent, and after a few moments of silence, he answered, "I choose my side as a knight of justice."

Aldrian, to be honest, was quite surprised by the answer. He could sense that it was sincere and truthful. He looked at the knight in front of him in a different light and finally showed a small smile.

"I see. Then you should know that abusing power as the highest authority of this town, making the lives of commoners difficult for personal gain, deserves punishment, right? That is what the town lord of this place was," he said.

Kuartin gritted his teeth. "Even if that is the case, the ones who have the right to punish him are the Beruin family as the true sovereign of this region. You cannot just punish someone's vassal," he said.

"Is that so? Do you really believe what you just said?" Aldrian asked, which made Kuartin turned silent.

"Do you believe the family you serve will enact justice?" Aldrian repeated.

Kuartin still did not answer, which made Aldrian continue.

"You already know the answer. And I also know that someone like you must understand how your family truly is. In fact, you know the dark side of your family, but you cannot do anything about it, correct?"

"I can sense all of your feelings, all of your thoughts. Your answer to me was the truth, and I can feel the turmoil in your heart. To be honest, to think that there is someone like you in that kind of family... I suppose that even in a corrupt family, there are at least one or two people with a righteous heart."

Kuartin was still wary of Aldrian, as this man might be the devil trying to influence him. However, he could not help but feel a heaviness in his heart as the man in front of him touched something that had been weighing on him for a long time.

The state of the Beruin family, the family he had served for so long. The current Beruin family was very different from the past.

Louis, who only heard the conversation, also contemplated the exchange between Aldrian and his leader. He had followed Kuartin for a long time and knew what kind of person he was and what lay within his heart.

As a knight, he more or less shared the same character as Kuartin because of his teachings. He also knew what kind of family the Beruin family had become. That was why, hearing the topic touching on the Beruin family and justice, made him want to see where this conversation would lead.

Suddenly, their surroundings changed. Aldrian, Kuartin, Louis, and Henrik now appeared in a dim place illuminated only by torches.

This caused Kuartin and Louis' bodies to tense as they looked at Aldrian seriously, still maintaining their wary stance.

"Where the hell is this?" Kuartin asked warily as he spread his spiritual sense.

He could sense that this place was a prison with many cells, and there were numerous prisoners inside. Louis sensed the same, but their gazes did not leave Aldrian, as they did not know what he intended to do.

Sweat rolled down their faces, and their hearts trembled as they did not know how they had appeared here. Was this the man's doing? Was this an illusion? Or was this reality?

They did not know. But the fact that they could not do anything when they were suddenly brought to this place made them truly feel powerless.

They finally knew that the gap between them and the man in front of them was tremendous. The man was far beyond their level.

As the two knights stood tense, Henrik, who had also been dragged here by Aldrian, was shocked. That was because he knew this place.

'Isn't this the dungeon under the mansion?! How is this possible?!' he screamed in his mind.

"Sir, please, sir, I did not do anything wrong. Please release me and my child, please!" a woman's voice suddenly echoed across the dim space.

"Release us! You are framing us! We did not do anything wrong!" a man shouted.

"Release me, please..."

Various voices could be heard, as if the prisoners were trying to reach them after sensing their presence. Kuartin and Louis looked at the nearby cells, where many hands stretched out toward them.

"This place is the dungeon under the town lord's mansion. Do you know who are locked inside those cells?" Aldrian said.

"They were refugees of war, the ones who escaped from the place they once called home to search for somewhere safer. The war that you also participated in. The war to defend this world. And what happened to these refugees? The town lord framed them and unjustly imprisoned them so he could sell them as slaves."

"From the looks of it, it seems he has been doing this for quite some time." Aldrian then shook his head.

"You went to war, facing those devils. Maybe you hoped for the safety of the common people. But in the end, someone like the town lord used his power to take advantage of the chaos and make profit for himself by using the people you tried to protect. How do you feel?"

Hearing that, Kuartin and Louis widened their eyes, and their hearts trembled. They looked at the nearby cells and focused their gazes inside.

They saw many people crammed within. Most of them were women and children. The others were young men. All of them were mortals, or cultivators at most at the disciple stage.

They looked desperate, their expressions showing that they had been wronged. Their pitiful appearance and condition made Kuartin and Louis feel that this was too much.

Kuartin then turned to Henrik.

"You. Is this true? The town lord framed the refugees so he could sell them as slaves?" he asked.

Henrik did not answer immediately, fear visible in his eyes as he thought about how Kuartin would react.

"ANSWER ME!" Kuartin roared, making Henrik shiver.

"Yes, yes, Sir Kuartin. Lord Agerus framed these refugees so he could sell them as slaves for his own benefit. But I did nothing except obey his orders," he answered quickly.

"Bastard!" Kuartin shouted as he punched Henrik in the face.

Henrik was thrown back and crashed into the wall, cracking it.

Pain spread across Henrik's face and body, but he did not dare to show even the slightest negative emotion. Only fear could be seen in his eyes as he cowered.

Kuartin gritted his teeth as fury burned inside him, a fierce and searing rage.

He knew that the current Beruin family was different from the past, but this—

This was beyond what he had imagined.

Did the patriarch know about this? Or was this solely the town lord's scheme?

But if the patriarch knew—

Kuartin clenched his teeth and looked at Henrik.

"Did the patriarch know about this matter?"

Henrik, still cowering, answered, "I don't know, Sir Kuartin. But I suppose the patriarch must know about it. As far as I know, everything the town lord did was already within the knowledge of the Beruin family."

Kuartin's eyes turned cold as he looked back at the cells.

"Louis, bring the knights here and release all of these people. Take care of them while I think about our next move," he said, then looked at Henrik.

"You will lead the way to the surface. If you do anything stupid, I will make sure you regret it."

Louis approached Henrik and forcefully made him stand up, dragging him by the collar.

"Let's go. Show me the way to the surface," he said.

Henrik did not say anything and simply followed Louis.

As Louis and Henrik left, Kuartin looked at Aldrian and narrowed his eyes.

"You... who are you? Why are you involving yourself in this matter?"

Aldrian smiled. "I'm just a passerby who happened to see injustice. Isn't it only right to fix this problem?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1030 - 1030: The Change in the Family

[1,631 words]

Kuartin was not satisfied with Aldrian's answer, but the fact that he killed the town lord in the name of punishment made him slightly lower his wariness toward him.

He had never seen a devil go as far as saving people and enacting justice. Instead, the devils would keep the corruption to weaken their forces from within.

But then Kuartin sighed. He was sent here to investigate the killer of the town lord, yet instead he found something else. The matter related to the Beruin family was also weighing on his mind, to the point that he could only follow the course of Aldrian's conversation.

What Aldrian said was true, and what he did aligned with his own character.

"You don't have to worry about my identity. I'm not a devil. In fact, I really hate them. If I hear there are devils in some place, I will make sure to kill them no matter where they are," Aldrian said.

Kuartin looked at Aldrian with narrowed eyes.

"Then why don't you join the war? You could meet more devils there, many of them even. At this time, we need help from any hands that can support us with their power," he said.

Aldrian smiled. "That's what I want. Then why don't you bring me to the frontline so I can kill as many of those devils as possible?"

Kuartin raised his eyebrows, but then he shook his head. "I'm afraid I cannot just bring someone with an unknown origin and identity to the frontline, even more so with my troops. Although I saw that you have done something good here, to suddenly bring you to the frontline is another matter."

"The situation at the frontline is delicate and full of suspicion. Because of the devils' tricks, it has made our forces suspicious of each other. So you can imagine what would happen if I brought someone unknown to the frontline."

"Moreover, my lord will surely question me regarding you and regarding this matter, and I don't think he will think too kindly of you or even me for what you and I did here."

"However, you may join the war by joining a voluntary group. Our family has a voluntary group that consists of people who voluntarily join the war. They are from various backgrounds, and as long as you can join it, your identity will be less questionable."

Aldrian thought for a moment before nodding. "Well, let's do that. However, before I do that, I want to meet your family's patriarch."

Kuartin frowned. "Why?"

Aldrian shrugged. "To make things clear. Throughout my stay here, I have always heard things that made me hate your family even more. I want to make sure that the Beruin family is truly like what I imagined."

"To stop people like the town lord of this city from appearing again, and to stop the suffering of the people of this city, I need to clean the source of it, which is the Beruin family, or should I say its higher ups. I don't mind causing a bloodbath, and that is what I have in mind if it comes to that."

Hearing that, Kuartin widened his eyes in shock. He instinctively pointed his sword toward Aldrian again.

"You cannot do something like that to my family. No matter what, they are still the family I serve. Even if I have to sacrifice myself here, I will not let you—"

"Do you really mean what you just said? If you say it with full conviction in your heart, then I will believe your words, and I will also kill you here and now," Aldrian cut in.

Kuartin's hand trembled, and his heart shook.

"Didn't I tell you that I can sense all of your feelings, all of your thoughts? You did not have enough conviction when you said those words. Something is weighing on your

mind, and it is regarding the Beruin family. Something that makes you feel regretful, and I can more or less guess what it is."

"As a knight of the Beruin family, you have your duty. You obey the order of your lord and do everything in the family's interest. However, you still have your own heart. You have your own conscience that makes you conflicted with your family's actions."

"The fact that the Beruin family has someone like you, and that you choose to stay in that kind of family, means that you treasure the family itself. But your loyalty as a knight, as someone who obeys your lord, is already not as strong as before. I think it must be because of the current situation of the Beruin family."

"If that is the case, then your regretful feeling is because of the Beruin family's situation. And since you treasure your family, you must want a change in your family's current condition."

At this point, Kuartin could no longer point his sword at Aldrian as it was trembling, and he slowly lowered it. What Aldrian said resonated with what he held in his heart.

He gritted his teeth and sheathed his sword, his face truly showing his inner struggle.

It was as if he did not want to admit what Aldrian said, but his heart would not allow him to deny it. He looked confused and lost about what he needed to do. He glanced at the prisoners inside the cells, who were still showing their desperation and shouting their protests.

Those people's situation was indirectly also caused by his own family.

As his heart fell into turmoil, he suddenly heard many footsteps and knew that Louis had brought the troops. Kuartin took a deep breath, and then he heard Aldrian speak.

"Follow me. Let's talk somewhere else."

Although Kuartin still felt confused, he decided to follow Aldrian. They met with Louis and the troops, and Kuartin gave instructions for what they needed to do. The troops started to release the prisoners while Aldrian guided Kuartin to the surface.

They reached the surface and walked across the mansion's grounds when Aldrian suddenly spoke.

"I want to hear your thoughts regarding the Beruin family. After I hear what you think, I will decide what I need to do to your family."

Kuartin sighed. "The current Beruin family... is not like the Beruin family that I served in the past, or at least not since the patriarch began to seem somehow different."

Aldrian's expression turned interested.

"Different?"

Kuartin nodded. "Yes, different. The patriarch of the Beruin family, Vergas Alvi Beruin, is a firm and skillful leader. He did not tolerate incompetence and corruption, and he led the family with a balance of cruelty and compassion. He is the type of leader who did not see the citizens under him as mere objects, but as people he needed to take care of."

"Although he is not perfect, at least the Beruin family could be said to be a righteous family that upheld certain qualities of the nobles, where the family members acted as one."

"However, one day, the patriarch's character suddenly changed into that of an indifferent person. He seemed more cruel than compassionate, and he also started appointing incompetent people to certain positions inside the family."

"He did not care about the well-being of his subjects, and what he did seemed like he was only abusing his power. Then, starting from there, the family's situation began deteriorating, which also affected the entire territory."

"Some of the elders who did not dare to do anything corrupt because of the patriarch's firm character started to make their own moves, making profits for themselves. The incompetent ones whom the patriarch put into their positions also became corrupt and only thought about their own benefit. The family became rotten." Kuartin clenched his fist.

"The noble family that I knew, the family that acted like true aristocrats who led the territory with compassion and were cruel to those who wanted to destroy it, changed into nothing more than a noble family acting like bandits. There is no class, there is no wisdom, only greed and destruction gnawing at the family that has been my home for so long."

Aldrian fell into thought after hearing the story. His mind instantly turned toward the devils' tricks. The fact that the patriarch's character suddenly changed was already a red flag. There was no way someone's character could change overnight unless the patriarch had been a master at disguising his true nature for a very long time.

"I know that my family has already fallen into this state, but I cannot do anything. I am just a knight who does what the lord of the house orders. I want to do something, but I feel powerless. To see the family I serve fall into this kind of situation makes me truly grieve," Kuartin continued.

"Inside my heart, I can only hope that the Beruin family I served in the past can return. That the patriarch I once served can return." Kuartin then sighed.

"But I know that kind of hope is, in the end, only my own wish. With each passing day, the Beruin family keeps straying further away from its past glory. I even started to think that I might as well stop being a knight so I would not be affected by this rotten situation."

There was only silence after Kuartin finished his story. He looked so tired, as if he wanted to go somewhere peaceful and simply retire.

Aldrian looked ahead of them as they stopped walking.

"Do you still want the Beruin family to return to the correct path?" Aldrian asked.

"Of course I do. Like I said, I want to do something for this family, to change the current situation. To make the patriarch return to his past self," Kuartin replied with full conviction.

Aldrian nodded.

"Good. Then let me see the patriarch, the source of all the changes in the family. I want to see him myself and check him, to find out what made him change so much. With that, we can start fixing your family's problem."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1031 - 1031: The Counterattack Plan

[1,535 words]

Celis City is one of the closest cities to the frontline and one of the main bases of the alliance forces against the devils. This is also the capital city of the Ervilos Dukedom of the Gardum Kingdom.

This is a big city with strong defenses and a large population. However, the city that is normally bustling with various activities of its denizens has, at this moment, become much quieter.

That was because many of the denizens of the city had already evacuated to other places as the war kept getting closer to the city.

Some chose to stay as they hoped they would never have to leave the place they called home. Despite their lives here becoming more difficult, they still chose to stay as they did not know where they were supposed to go.

They could only hope that the situation in the war was improving, despite the news that came from the frontline always being discouraging.

For the rest of the denizens who had not left the city, they would see many troops walking back and forth across the city, creating a tense atmosphere. As one of the main bases of the alliance forces against the devils, this place was also the command post where all the higher-ups of the kingdom who led the troops gathered.

In the center of the city, there was a big castle where, at this moment, a group of people had gathered inside one of the halls where a big table was placed at the center. A large map was laid out on top of the table with some markings so the group could see it clearly.

The group gathered here were all powerhouses of the Gardum Kingdom, some of the strongest cultivators of the kingdom and the leaders of their own noble households or organizations.

One of them was at this moment explaining the updated situation of the war. The middle-aged man with short brown hair, wearing armor, pointed at the map.

"The devils, with an estimated fifty thousand cultivators, have built their camp near the Bervos River, and they have two middle Pseudo-Immortal stage cultivators there. They have already built many formations in their surroundings to prepare for any of our surprise attacks," he said.

"In the north of the Durkan Valley, the devils are still not making any drastic moves, but their strategic position makes it difficult for us to take back the valley area. However, the troops from Marquess Surkov have been able to build their camp quite near the valley without much problem."

"That is for the report, Your Highness." The man then looked at the young man with long blonde hair. He was a handsome young man with blue eyes, wearing royal armor that made him look gallant and strong.

This young man was one of the most respected figures in the kingdom, as he himself was a member of the royal family. He was the First Prince of the Gardum Kingdom, Martis Veradin Gardum.

Everyone looked at him with reverence as the young man nodded in understanding.

"Thank you for the report, Marquess Luxen," the prince said. Then he pondered the report he had just heard.

After a few moments of silence, he finally opened his lips. "Do you think the devils are planning something with their recent movements? At this time, I can finally see some pattern in their movements."

"First, they move their troops in the north with great momentum and strong force, which makes our forces fall back. However, after they capture some places, they stop their movement and remain there for a period of time. But while they stay in their positions, the troops in the south are the ones who move with great momentum and force."

"They will do the same with their other troop divisions. After conquering some places, they will stop and stay there, and then other devil troops in other places will move forward. It is as if they are waiting for each division to conquer their targets first before moving. They are taking turns."

Hearing that, the people shared the same opinion as him, and they also started to think more deeply. One of them, a middle-aged man with short black hair, looked at the prince.

"Your Highness, that does seem to be the case, and that kind of behavior could be for various reasons. However, the sudden change in the devils' strategy, I think, could be connected to some reports that we received more than a year ago, when a big force of the devils suddenly left this world," he said.

"At that time, we thought that it might be another strategy of the devils, or perhaps a rotation of their troops. However, after that, we did not hear any news regarding a new big wave of devils coming from the Central Region of Heaven."

"There have only been some new groups of devils that still came to support the other devils in this world, but the numbers are no longer as big as in the past. In my humble opinion, the reason the devils are using a new strategy like they currently are is to avoid expending too much of their limited troops in this world."

"With the number of incoming devils not being as many as in the past, the devils that already in this world will have to be careful and change their attack pattern. One at a time, so they can support the others from behind if needed."

"In other words, the devils cannot use the aggressive strategy like in the past because of their limited manpower. That is why, although they still advance into our deeper territory, they are much more careful with their movements and support each division with precision."

The others who heard this showed expressions of understanding, and the prince's eyes also came to a realization. He looked at the man with admiration.

"I see. What Duke Fernandez said makes sense. Nice catch, Duke Fernandez," Prince Martis said.

"Thank you, Your Highness," the man replied.

"If that is the case..." The prince then looked at the map. "We need to change our approach. We need to be braver with our attacks. All this time, we hesitated to make drastic moves by adding more of our forces because we were wary of how the devils would retaliate."

"However, if the devils' reinforcements keep decreasing, then we can start to push them back. With their limited numbers, we can try to overwhelm them with our own numbers. Despite having strong cultivators, if we use a good strategy, we can defeat their strong cultivators."

"The only thing we need to be wary of is the devils infiltrating our forces. Although we have already spread the net and made measures to flush out any devils that might be hidden among us, we still need to be careful. Do not let them cause any mishap to our next plan."

The prince's gaze swept across the people there.

"I know that you are suspicious of each other's forces, but at this time we need to unite. We need to strike back at the devils with much greater force. Can you do that for me?"

"Yes, Your Highness," the others shouted in unison.

The prince nodded. "Good. Then we can strike back after we have reorganized our troops. Let's concentrate our forces here and here. We should launch a surprise attack at the same time to confuse them—"

The prince then explained his strategy and the division of tasks for each of the leaders present.

After the prince finished explaining his strategy, and once the others agreed with it, it was decided that they would use it in the next battle.

"Our attack will begin after we have gathered all of our elite groups. I know that some of your elite troops were sent back to your territories to deal with the devils that suddenly appeared. The newest one is the Lion Brigade of Marquess Beruin," Prince Martis said. He then looked at one person.

"How is it, Marquess Beruin? Have you already received any news from the location of the suspected devils?"

A middle-aged man with blonde hair and a mustache looked at the prince. He had eyes that looked like he had not slept for a few days. However, everyone knew that this person was always like this. This man was one of the most influential nobles, Vergas Alvi Beruin.

"I have not yet received any news from the Lion Brigade, Your Highness. It might take some time before I get any news, because they have likely only just started their investigation," Marquess Beruin replied.

Prince Martis sighed and nodded. "I see. Well, if they cannot come sooner, then it is fine. We can still proceed with our attack, although our firepower will not be as strong as if they were here."

Prince Martis then said a few more words before he dismissed the meeting.

As the people started to leave the hall, Marquess Beruin's eyes narrowed.

'Damn it, we are truly running out of time. They will launch an aggressive attack, and with the number of our troops left in the surrounding region, we will surely be overwhelmed.'

'Although I already pulled back the Lion Brigade under the pretense of investigating the devils' infiltration, that is not enough to weaken the entire alliance force.' His expression turned restless.

'I have to inform the main force. They have to prepare for the counterattack!'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1032 - 1032: To the Frontline

[1,598 words]

In Abrum Town, the situation turned shocking for the people there. The Lion Brigade that came to the town actually found the town lord's corruption and punished him.

Every sins that the town lord committed were announced by the Lion Brigade, and they said they had already executed him. The people who had lived in the town for so long felt relief, as what happened in this town had already become an open secret among them.

They had hoped that something like this would come sooner, but this was much better than never.

However, they were truly astonished by what the town lord had done. They did not expect that he was that rotten, even taking advantage of the refugees who came with the intent of looking for safety.

How could he be so cruel like that?

The Lion Brigade also spread across the town to catch the rest of the accomplices who were involved in the corruption.

From the gang that usually created trouble in the town to the people who gained benefits unjustly from merchants who visited the town.

One of them was the one who extorted Village Head Rokan from the Treasures Pavilion, Renfil.

All of them were connected to the town lord, which the Lion Brigade found out after searching the entire mansion for proof of his corruption.

As the entire town was flipped upside down, Aldrian watched all of this from the room of his inn. He let Kuartin do what he needed to do first. This was something Kuartin must have wanted for a long time.

Initially, Aldrian's plan involved much more bloodshed here. He would have killed the ones sent by the Beruin family to draw attention and make the situation much bigger. He would attract all the attention to the Beruin family, and then he would show how bad that family truly was.

However, he changed his mind after he heard Kuartin's answer regarding the righteous heart and the knight of justice. He could take advantage of it and make the process much faster with Kuartin's help.

Kuartin, as the leader of the Lion Brigade, an elite troop of the Beruin family, would have a much greater impact if he also helped him.

The only thing he needed was to convince Kuartin to move according to his heart, to be braver and more decisive.

Aldrian could not help but smile. He remembered what the Venerable Karma Seeker had said to him in the past about the righteous heart, words that came back to him when he saw Kuartin.

A righteous heart was truly heavy for anyone, especially for someone like Kuartin, who was surrounded by corruption yet could not do anything.

That would not be good for the soul and mind, as they could be crushed by their own heart, causing an inner demon, which could make them end up like the Envy Devil in the past.

Not everyone was like himself. He had many tricks and enough strength to keep his righteous heart with helping those who needed it. That was why he also wanted to help people who had a righteous heart when their surroundings were full of corruption.

In the end, the purge took a while.

In Arsun Village, the news had already reached them regarding the purge by the Lion Brigade. One of the villagers who had just returned from the town explained what had happened there to some of the villagers he met, and it left them shocked.

Village Head Rokan, who had not yet visited the town since Aldrian left, was also shocked. To think that something like that had happened in such a short time.

What had Aldrian done in the town to cause this kind of uproar?

Still, he smiled and looked at the sky. He could not help but feel relieved. One of the weights in his heart seemed to have disappeared, making him feel more refreshed and lighter.

In his heart, he felt thankful once again to Aldrian. He truly hoped that after this chaos, the town could gain stability and that the one who led them next would be more just.

However, he did not hope for much because of the Beruin family itself, which had allowed the injustice in the city to grow. They were also the ones who made his life and the lives of other commoners difficult without any remorse.

But he could not help thinking that with Aldrian, maybe something would change. Maybe he would hear something about him again in the near future.

After two days, the Lion Brigade had cleaned the town of all the town lord's influence, and Kuartin decided to return to the frontline. Aldrian would also go with them, as that would be much easier and faster.

If Aldrian wanted to meet the patriarch of the Beruin family, then there was no faster way than through the front door directly, which was through Kuartin.

However, before they departed to return to the frontline, Aldrian called Kuartin to his inn to talk about the patriarch he served. This was about his suspicion that the patriarch was being influenced by the devils, or even that the patriarch himself was a devil.

After hearing Aldrian's suspicion, Kuartin was truly shocked.

"How is that possible? But... but... I have never sensed or seen anything that connects lord Vergas to the devils. He is truly like a normal cultivator, only with a sudden change in character," he said in a tone full of shock.

Aldrian sighed. "The change in character itself is already a red sign. I know you must have already thought about what could make your patriarch change that much, but you cannot do anything because of your position."

"Not showing any sign of connection to the devils does not guarantee that he is a normal cultivator. The devils are truly cunning and have many tricks. That is why I told you I need to meet him personally, as I have my own way to know whether your patriarch is influenced by the devils or not."

Kuartin frowned deeply as he pondered this matter. As he thought deeper, he could not help but feel that what Aldrian said made more sense.

He suddenly gritted his teeth in fury. Thinking that the patriarch all this time might be a devil or under the devils' influence made him want to rampage. He felt like a fool for obeying every order the patriarch had given since that day.

His heart truly ached and burned with anger at the thought that the devil had caused the destruction of his family while he had done nothing about it. He had only watched like a fool as the devil played him and many others in the family!

"Calm down, Sir Kuartin. I know you are angry, but let me make sure first. Then you may deliver the punishment yourself. Well, if you want to. If not, then let me..."

"No, Sir Aldrian. Please let me be the one to deliver the punishment if the patriarch is proven to be influenced by the devils, or even if he is the devil himself. This is so my heart may find peace." Kuartin said.

Aldrian nodded. "Alright."

Kuartin then stood up. "Then let's go. We should depart now. My troops have already taken too much time here, leaving our post on the frontline vacant."

Kuartin and Aldrian then departed to the frontline through the warp gate in the town.

The other members of the Lion Brigade were actually wondering about Aldrian's identity. Why did he seem so close to their commander? Why did their commander treat that man with such respect?

The only thing that kept them from being restless or suspicious of Aldrian was their commander's and Louis' explanation that Aldrian was not a devil and was a strong cultivator who would help them fight against the devils.

They were curious, as they had never seen Aldrian before, yet their commander and vice commander showed him great respect.

As the Lion Brigade returned to the frontline, the alliance troops had already started preparing for their next attack. The strategy from the higher-ups had already spread across the frontline troops, and many had begun to reorganize.

Many troops started to concentrate in three places across the region to prepare for frontal and surprise attacks. One of the places was where the Lion Brigade had been deployed before, which was why the moment they arrived, they were stunned to see that there were already troops from other regions present.

One large area of the forest had already become the base of the alliance forces. They built tents between the large trees to cover their movements from the devils' observers watching from a distance.

Although the devils might know of their presence, they would not be able to estimate their full numbers, which would give the alliance a surprise advantage once the attack commenced.

With the new strategy, their numbers would increase further, going beyond the devils' estimation.

Kuartin, who still did not understand the situation because he had not received any report from the frontline, looked at Aldrian.

"Sir Aldrian, it looks like something happened while I was gone. Let me check what happened first. Sir Aldrian can follow Louis, and he will guide you to the place where you can stay for now," he said.

"As for meeting with the patriarch, it looks like we have to postpone it, as I need to see what happened."

Aldrian nodded. "Alright. Go do what you need to do, Sir Kuartin."

Kuartin nodded and walked away, while Louis escorted Aldrian to the tent where he could stay. Aldrian observed his surroundings as many troops carried out their activities.

While he was still walking, he suddenly felt a familiar sensation. A familiar sensation that made his heart grow irritated.

What else could it be, if not the appearance of devils nearby?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1033 - 1033: Relief

[1,584 words]

Aldrian spotted some devil presence among the troops of the alliance force. He observed the people surrounding him while still following Louis and inspected each person one by one. They were truly devil cultivators and not just cultivators under some kind of influence or something like that.

'One, two, three... oh, the devils have quite many infiltrators here,' Aldrian thought as he sensed more than five devils nearby.

They were blending in nicely and acted as if they had already lived among the troops here for a long time. He did not know if the method they used was the same as the devils in the Barisan continent in the past.

However, if it was different, then these devils must have mastered disguise techniques, and they were specialized devils sent to infiltrate this place.

"Sir Aldrian, this is the commander's tent. Please feel free to use it. Commander Kuartin already sent his message to me that you could stay here for now," Louis said.

Aldrian nodded and entered the tent. Some people wondered about the newcomer who came with the Lion Brigade, and they were astonished that this person entered the commander's tent.

Why did they give an unknown person the commander's tent?

Some of the disguised devils nearby also saw Aldrian, and they wondered about the identity of the person entering the commander's tent.

For them, they needed to gather any detailed information regarding the alliance troops. If there were individuals they needed to be wary of, they had to take note and send the information to the main base. With detailed information, they could strategize how to handle their enemies effectively.

One of them slowly approached Aldrian's tent, but he made it look as if he had something to do near the tent. He wanted to hear the information regarding Aldrian from the Lion Brigade troops' lips, as at least some of them must have talked about it.

The other devils who saw one of them approaching continued what they were doing. They thought that one of them was enough to gather information about the newcomer.

However, when they diverted their attention from their friend who was approaching the Lion Brigade, without realizing it, that devil suddenly disappeared.

Inside Aldrian's tent, he had already grasped the devil, his hand covering the devil's mouth.

"What a sneaky rat. You actually came to me. Well, I want to see what your troops have in store anyway," Aldrian said with a smile.

"Upmh, upmh!" The devil could not do anything. He could only see Aldrian's smiling face before pain struck his brain and his sight turned into darkness. Not even a single sound could be heard from the tent, even though there were some people right outside it.

In another tent, which was much bigger than the one occupied by Aldrian, Kuartin had just entered when he saw an old man with long white hair, wearing armor, sitting and reading some reports.

The old man's aura was restrained and his face was calm, but Kuartin felt as if he were standing before a calm monster. A monster that might wake up at any moment and unleash its powerful strength.

Kuartin held deep respect for this man, who came from the royal family's troops.

The old man was the highest commander on this region's battlefield, a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator. Zordan Rugerman, one of the two highest generals of the Royal Family.

Zordan looked at Kuartin when he saw him enter the tent and smiled.

"Sir Kuartin, you are already back? How is the problem in your family's territory? Has it been solved?" he asked.

Kuartin nodded. "Yes, General, all is solved. Luckily it was not a devil like what my lord suspected."

Zordan nodded. "I see. That is fortunate. Although it was not the devils, it is much better to be safe. Those devils are truly unpredictable and cunning," he sighed. "Still, I am glad that you could come back before we commence our attack tomorrow."

"General, did anything happen while I was gone? Why did I see many troops from other regions here?" Kuartin asked, which made Zordan look confused.

"Marquess Beruin did not tell you?" he asked, and Kuartin responded with a shake of his head. This made Zordan even more confused.

"Truly strange. This kind of information should be told to you as soon as possible, as it is important information," he said.

"Anyway, the higher ups have decided their next move and strategy. The point is, from this moment on, we will attack the devils hard without hesitation. The troops from other regions are here to strengthen our forces, and we will not hesitate to overwhelm those bastards with our numbers."

Hearing that, Kuartin narrowed his eyes. This kind of information should have been told to him by his lord, as he was supposed to attend the meeting when they strategized their next move.

This was the first time his lord did not inform him of this kind of important news. Why?

In the past, there were times when the Lion Brigade was also pulled back from the frontline as the devils infiltrated their territory. However, their patriarch still informed them if there was something important, albeit late.

'Wait, late?'

Suddenly, this line of thought crossed Kuartin's mind. Since his conversation with Aldrian regarding the possibility of Marquess Beruin being under the devils' influence or even becoming a devil himself, his mind had become much clearer.

From his past perspective, that kind of detail did not catch his attention, as he thought the patriarch might be busy and thus told him late.

But what if that was not the case?

What if those were deliberate actions?

"Sir Kuartin, is there something wrong? You suddenly fell silent, and your expression seems to be pondering something deeply," Zordan asked, which made Kuartin come out of his thoughts and shake his head.

"Nothing, General. I was just thinking about something back home," he replied. For now, he would not tell anyone about his and Aldrian's suspicion. They needed to make sure first about the patriarch's condition.

"Anyway, General, I want to report to you that I brought someone with me. He will be a great help to our troops, and he has a special ability that allows him to differentiate devils from normal cultivators."

Hearing that, Zordan's expression turned surprised.

"Are you sure?" he asked, and Kuartin responded with a nod. Although Kuartin had not yet seen how Aldrian could differentiate devils from normal cultivators, he decided to believe in him.

He just felt that he could trust what Aldrian said.

"I am sure, General. With his ability, he would be a great help in this war. The devil infiltrators among our troops have been a troublesome problem that has haunted us since last year. With his presence, we do not have to feel suspicion toward our own forces again. The devil spy problem will be solved if we have him."

Zordan's expression turned ecstatic.

"Great. Please bring him here. I want to see him myself, and I personally want to witness his ability."

Kuartin nodded. "Yes, General," he answered before he left the tent.

After Kuartin left, Zordan released a sigh of relief. The problem of devil infiltrators had already become his headache since last year. They could blend among their forces and act like one of them.

This caused cracks within the alliance force, as they started to grow suspicious of each other, and it made their teamwork not always solid. He knew that this must be what those devils wanted. To plant seeds of doubt among the alliance forces.

If what Kuartin said was true, then this person would truly become a valuable asset in this war. He had finally found the solution to his headache, and they could move more confidently and freely.

As Kuartin walked toward the Lion Brigade's camp, Aldrian was still inside his tent. At this moment, he grabbed a different person from earlier. The one in his grasp was also a devil infiltrator, and he looked through his memories to search for important information, if there was any.

After he was done, he killed him by decapitation and threw the body into a spatial rift. He had already done this four times since entering the tent, and he could still sense a few more devils within his domain.

'The troops of the devils stationed in this region are huge, but they lack reinforcement from other worlds or the central region of Heaven. These spies did not understand the reason regarding the lack of reinforcement, but the devils have resorted to this infiltration strategy since the lack of reinforcement began more than a year ago,' Aldrian thought.

He had not yet traced the origins of the devils he had just killed, but from that information, it gave him some sense of relief.

He could not help smiling, as that information showed that he was most likely still on the southern side of the First Heaven, or still within the Vampire King's area of responsibility.

Why did he think like that?

That was because the devils had lacked reinforcement for more than a year.

Of course, they would lack reinforcement, as the Vampire King had mobilized many of his troops, who were spread across various worlds, to invade the central star cluster. With that kind of mobilization, the side effect was that the other battlefields became weakened.

Now that he had already killed the Vampire King and his troops, the devils in this world would have even more limited numbers. It was only a matter of time before they were defeated, as long as the forces of this world strategized their counterattack properly.

As he was still thinking about it, Kuartin entered the tent.

"Sir Aldrian, my apologies, but our General wants to see you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1034 - 1034: Finding Spies

[1,552 words]

Aldrian nodded. He more or less already expected something like this when he was brought here by Kuartin.

"Lead the way, Sir Kuartin," Aldrian said.

After they left the tent, Aldrian accidentally heard chatter from nearby troops.

"Hey, where is Frank? I don't see him. Wasn't he just near us a moment ago?"

"No idea. He was there earlier, but he was gone the moment I looked in that direction momentarily. Maybe he walked somewhere? I don't know, maybe to take a pee?"

Aldrian, who heard it, did not show any reaction and just kept walking away.

'I'm sorry, but your friend is already dead. The one you saw was the devil,' he thought.

As they walked, Kuartin spoke to Aldrian.

"The one Sir Aldrian will meet is the highest commander of this battlefield, a cultivator from the royal family, and one of the two strongest generals of the royal family, General Zordan Rugerman."

Aldrian nodded.

After walking for a few minutes, they finally reached Zordan's tent, where Aldrian finally met General Zordan.

The general, who also saw Aldrian, was stunned by how young he was. When he checked Aldrian's cultivation stage, he was quite impressed that Aldrian had already reached the middle stage of Pseudo Immortal Establishment.

General Zordan also could not help but feel something from Aldrian. Something that made him feel like he should revere this man. It was as if his soul naturally urged him to bow, which truly surprised him.

'It's like when I stand before His Majesty,' he thought as he remembered his king.

Aldrian let the general check him to avoid causing any misunderstanding. Aldrian himself had already checked the general to see whether he was a normal cultivator or not anyway, so this was fair.

"General, this is the person I was talking about. He is Sir Aldrian," Kuartin said after a few moments of silence. He knew that the general must be observing Aldrian, as he did not say anything the moment he saw him.

General Zordan stood up and showed a smile toward Aldrian.

"My apologies if I was impolite. I am just surprised, as I did not expect that you are so young yet have already reached this level of cultivation," he said as he offered a handshake.

Aldrian also smiled and accepted the handshake. "No problem, General. I am already used to that kind of reaction."

"Ahahaha, well it cannot be helped. Others must think the same as me the moment they see you. Anyway, I already heard from Sir Kuartin that you have an ability that makes it possible for you to differentiate the devil infiltrators from our troops. Is that true?" Zordan asked.

Aldrian nodded. "Yes, General. This ability is special to me, and with it, I can identify them with one hundred percent precision. There will be no wrong judgment."

Zordan's smile became more delighted. "I see. Then, Sir Aldrian, would you like to show me your ability? I would like to know how many infiltrators are among the troops under my command at this moment. I know that there are some spies among my troops, but I am not sure how many. It would be truly helpful if we could eliminate them before we attack those devils."

"Of course, General. In fact, I already caught four of them and killed them after extracting some information," Aldrian replied, which made the general and Kuartin widen their eyes in astonishment.

"What? In such a short time, Sir Aldrian?" Kuartin blurted out.

Aldrian nodded. "Yes. Even when I just arrived, I could sense several of them, and there are quite many among the troops. I imagine these spies have been a headache for you, General, as they are not only sabotaging the trust among the alliance troops but also sabotaging the troops themselves."

"You said you got information from them. Then could you tell me what it is, Sir Aldrian?" Zordan asked with narrowed eyes.

"I know that the infiltrators can disguise themselves as members of the troops, and they can act like the person they disguise because they read the memories of their victims," Aldrian replied.

"The ones who infiltrated our troops are devils who are masters of disguise. They use a method that makes them undetectable even by detection treasures used to check for devils. Those infiltrators swallow an artifact that makes it possible to hide all of their devil properties, even their devil energy and soul."

Zordan and Kuartin were astonished.

"I see, so that is the case. No wonder the artifacts we used to detect the devils are not working. But what kind of artifact are they using that can be mass-produced yet have such a game-changing effect?" Zordan asked.

"That artifact is a joint creation of an alchemist and a blacksmith. Well, actually, it is easy to create as long as they have an experienced alchemist and blacksmith, and the materials needed are not very rare," Aldrian replied.

What the infiltrators used in this place was the same as what the devils used in the Barisan Continent in the past. He already had much experience with it, so he was not surprised. But it seemed that the people here were experiencing it for the first time.

"The only weakness of this method is that they cannot unleash their energy. The moment they use their energy, they will be instantly found out, as they cannot hide their devil energy once it leaves their skin," Aldrian continued.

"What?! If that is the case, then this matter should be easy to solve," Zordan said.

"Not so simple, General. I know what is on your mind. You want to gather the entire troops and let them exude their energy at the same time, right?" Aldrian said, which made Zordan stunned before he nodded.

"Quite sharp. Yes, that is the easiest way to flush out any devil spies if what you said about the weakness is true."

"However, those devils also have another method to make your plan useless. They can exude their victims' energy, as they absorb their victims' energy into another artifact that they also store inside their bodies. This artifact is specially made to store the energy of others, and they can release this energy if needed," Aldrian said.

Zordan and Kuartin frowned deeply, and Zordan sighed in exasperation and scratched his head.

"This is truly irritating. Those devils truly have many tricks."

Aldrian smiled. "That's why I'm here. I will clean them up. Their methods will be useless in front of my ability."

Zordan smiled and sighed once again. "Alright, then I will have to rely on you, Sir Aldrian, for this matter. So how can we eliminate them? I hope we can eliminate those spies before tomorrow, as tomorrow is the day we launch the counterattack."

Aldrian nodded. "Then without waiting any longer, please gather all the troops. After that, leave it to me. Those spies will be found out in no time."

Zordan nodded. "Alright." He then looked at Kuartin.

"Sir Kuartin, I want you to spread my order to your troops and any troops nearby the Lion Brigade to gather in front of the platform."

"Yes, General," Kuartin answered before he quickly stepped out of the tent.

Zordan then took out a communication artifact and connected it to someone.

"Gather the entire troops, without exception. No matter if they are sentries or scouts, I want all of them in front of the platform, and I want it done in no more than fifteen minutes," he said before cutting off the communication. He looked at Aldrian.

"Let's go, Sir Aldrian. We will wait for the entire troops to gather."

They then stepped out of the tent and walked in one direction when Aldrian could see a platform already built between the trees. As he walked, the situation around him had already turned quite chaotic, with many troops rushing to form lines in front of the platform.

Zordan and Aldrian then stepped onto the platform and waited while observing the troops quickly gathering. Some of the higher-ranking commanders also came and stood on the platform behind Zordan and Aldrian.

Just as Zordan had ordered, all of the troops were gathered in no more than fifteen minutes, showing high discipline despite being from different origins.

The atmosphere, which had just been full of voices and movement as the troops hurried to gather, turned eerily silent. Not a single sound could be heard. They looked at Zordan with serious expressions, but then they also noticed Aldrian, which made them curious.

Who was he to stand on the platform with those high-ranking commanders, and even beside General Zordan?

General Zordan, thinking that all troops had already gathered, then looked at Aldrian.

"There are more than sixty thousand troops here. Can you do it, Sir Aldrian?"

Aldrian nodded.

"Then please," the general said as he stepped aside, and Aldrian took a step forward. He observed the troops as if searching for the devils.

In fact, at this moment, he had already scanned each person present, all of whom were already within his domain, and had identified every single devil without missing one.

After finding them, Aldrian shouted, his voice echoing across the gathering of troops.

"All troops, take two steps forward!"

The troops were stunned and immediately looked at General Zordan, which made the general shout,

"Obey this man's order!"

They instantly rushed to follow Aldrian's command and took two steps forward.

However, there were some who did not move, which made the ones near them confused.

Aldrian smiled upon seeing this and shouted once again,

"The ones who did not move are all devil spies."

Hearing that, many widened their eyes in shock.

What?!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1035 - 1035: Crushed

[1,524 words]

Hearing Aldrian's declaration, many were truly shocked, even Kuartin and Zordan. They looked at Aldrian in bewilderment. How could he be so sure that they were the spies?

From what they saw, Aldrian had only observed the troops for a moment before ordering them to take two steps forward. As they observed the troops, they finally understood why he ordered them to take two steps forward.

The other high-ranking commanders on the platform, who still did not understand the situation or who Aldrian was, began to look at him with various expressions. There were some who understood why Aldrian was here. There were some who looked at him with suspicion. There were even some who looked at him with sudden hostility.

They could sense that the ones who did not move were restricted by something that made them unable to move. They knew that this meant that Aldrian was trying to show them that they were spies.

The troops standing near the ones suspected to be the devil spies also looked shocked as they stared at those suspects. They were their comrades in arms, their brothers, their sisters, their friends. They had not shown any suspicious activity.

How was that possible?

"Impossible! There is no way that Martin is a spy!"

"No way! Alfred is not a spy, sir. Whoever you are, you cannot accuse someone of being a spy without any proof!"

"Yeah, don't say something that is still not certain!"

"General Zordan, who is this man? Why are you bringing him here and letting him accuse some of the troops of being spies without proof?"

"Look, they cannot move. This man must have done something to them! Whoever he is, this kind of behavior is unacceptable!"

Many voices of protest echoed, all directed toward Aldrian or General Zordan. Zordan could not say anything, as he also did not understand how Aldrian's ability worked.

He glanced at Kuartin and saw that he was also confused, which irritated him. If Aldrian could not say something convincing to these people, then he himself could also be affected. This would also affect the entire army, and in the end, it would affect future battles.

He looked at Aldrian, who still wore a calm expression as if everything was under control.

Still, although he was quite perplexed and even irritated because Aldrian had suddenly pulled off something like this, he was impressed that Aldrian seemed to have restricted the people suspected of being devil spies.

He could sense tens of suspected spies spread among the troops, all of them scattered in different directions. How was it possible for Aldrian to restrict them with such precision without showing any sign of using elemental laws?

Was this space law? It looked like it.

But even he, a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator, could not sense any use of space law. It was as if the space itself had suddenly trapped those people naturally.

Aldrian, who was still hearing many doubtful and even cursing voices directed at him, finally opened his lips.

"Could you be silent for a moment, please?"

As he said this, a sudden pressure from the heavens pressed down upon the entire army, which shocked them. The pressure lasted only for a second, but that was enough to shake their souls and make their bodies tremble.

All the commanders, including Kuartin and General Zordan, were truly astonished. They had not expected such sudden pressure from the heavens and felt fear deep within their souls.

There was no doubt that this was pressure from the heavens itself, the kind usually unleashed when a being had triggered the heavens' reaction.

Even though it lasted only for a second, it was enough to shatter their bravado. The pressure just now was truly terrifying, as if the heavens itself were truly angry.

No one showed the same protesting expressions as before. All of their faces were pale and filled with terror.

The only one who was not affected here was Aldrian as he swept his gaze across the troops. His expression was not disturbed, and he still wore that calm face. The people who saw him like this were truly shaken. Was the pressure from the heavens just now caused by him?

How was that possible? How could he unleash something like the heavens' pressure? Could he control the heavens' pressure or something?

The truth was that Aldrian had unleashed that pressure using his domain's power, which was misunderstood as the heavens' pressure. It was not strange for these people to mistake it for the heavens' pressure, as they had felt the pressure of his entire domain's power for that one second.

If it had been the real heavens' pressure, almost everyone here would already be fainted. At this moment, he could sense the heavens' fury toward them.

If the heavenly laws allowed it, then the heavens would undoubtedly send down heavenly punishment upon all of these people.

He understood why the heavens were angry, and he had no intention of using it for this matter. He only swept his gaze across the people who were looking at him in horror.

"I know all of you are doubting my judgment when I said that the people you consider your friends, your family, the ones close to you, are spies. However, you must already know that we are facing the problem of devils slipping among us," Aldrian said.

"I have an ability that allows me to differentiate them. I did not accuse someone without reason, and I can also prove it. You will see it yourself."

He then looked at the ones he had identified as spies.

"Now, for the ones who did not move earlier, I want you to release your energy continuously at maximum output for twenty-five seconds. Easy, right? With your current level, there is no way you would deplete your energy in that amount of time."

Aldrian then released his spatial lock on all the people he had pointed out as spies.

"If I am wrong in my judgment, then I will apologize, even kowtow to you one by one as you step onto this platform. Isn't that enough to restore the name that I have already stained?"

The others then looked at the accused ones, and their acquaintances stared at them as if saying, "Do it."

The accused ones started to panic as all the attention was now on them. They truly did not expect the situation to develop like this. The fact that that unknown man could point out the spies so accurately meant that his ability was real, and that he was truly dangerous.

Moreover, he seemed to know about the weakness of their infiltration method, which depended on the artifacts inside their bodies.

What Aldrian asked them to do was easy for a normal cultivator.

However, for them, if they released their own energy, then they were finished. If they used their victims' energy instead, the artifact could only store a limited amount. At most, the energy would be depleted if they continuously released it for twenty seconds or so.

Anything beyond that, and their devil energy would instantly be exposed.

They tried to think of a way to get out of the situation, but they found none.

"Come on, why are you staying still and silent? Release your energy continuously for twenty-five seconds," Aldrian said again.

At this point, the people started to realize that there was something wrong with the accused ones. They began to believe what Aldrian had said, and many showed suspicious expressions toward the accused.

They took some distance and looked at them with various expressions. Some were wary, others were in disbelief.

They were their acquaintances, yet they were actually devils? How?

For the commanders, their expressions turned serious. There was nothing left to confirm. They already believed Aldrian and had branded these people as spies. Their reactions alone were enough.

As the devils saw that there was no way out, it was as if they shared the same thought. They began to trigger their dantians so they could commit suicide by blowing themselves up. They suddenly grinned, which made the people near them feel goosebumps.

"Stop them! They are going to blow themselves up!" one of the commanders shouted as they sensed what the devils were about to do.

"Too late! For the devil go—"

Before one of the devils could finish shouting his last heroic roar, his body was suddenly crushed into a cube-shaped lump of flesh, as if something had compressed him into a small object.

All of the devils met the same fate, their bodies crushed into cube-shaped masses, causing the nearby people to gasp. The sight was truly brutal and horrifying, but they knew they would have been dead if these devils had succeeded.

Was this also that man's doing?

Many saw that Aldrian was just standing there without doing anything. He was merely watching them with his calm gaze, yet those devils were instantly crushed to death, turned into lumps of flesh.

How did he do it?

After the devils' bodies were destroyed, the troops finally sensed the remnants of devil energy.

There was no doubt anymore. The ones who had just been crushed to death were devils.

This caused those who had been acquainted with them to feel deep sadness.

Didn't that mean the real ones they knew were already dead?

"Attention to all troops," Aldrian finally spoke again, which made all of them look in his direction.

"Are you angry?" he asked.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1036 - 1036: Gaining Trust

[1,477 words]

"Are you angry?" Aldrian asked.

All the troops looked at him without answering the question. Aldrian's gaze then fell on one of the troops who looked like he wanted to cry.

"Are you angry?" Aldrian asked him.

The man with teary eyes looked at Aldrian.

"Yes," the man said with a trembling voice.

"Why are you angry?" Aldrian asked again.

"Because the devils used my best friend as the person they disguised themselves as. They must have already killed him," the man answered. Aldrian nodded and looked at another person who showed sadness and fury.

"You, are you angry?"

The man instantly shouted, "I'm angry, I'm truly angry! Those bastards used my brother as the person they disguised themselves as!"

Aldrian nodded, and his gaze swept to the ones who looked truly sad and furious about the deaths of their friends and families.

"Once again, I ask all of you, are you angry?"

One of them raised his voice. "I'm angry, I'm truly angry!"

The others also started to follow.

"I'm angry!"

"I'm angry!"

"We are angry!"

They shouted their feelings. Their expressions showed that they wanted to kill someone at that very moment. They did not waver when they looked directly at Aldrian's face. It was as if they had forgotten about the heavens' pressure not long ago.

Aldrian then continued after hearing many answers.

"Why are you angry? Why do you feel angry?"

"Because of the devils! They played us and killed our friends! They are existences worthy of death!" one of them shouted.

"Those devils have killed many of our friends!"

"My brother is the one the devils used as a disguise!"

"They are..."

One by one, they shouted their answers, and Aldrian continued.

"That's right. You are justified in being angry, and I can feel how you feel. I can feel your burning fury and your desire for revenge. Do you want the ones who have already taken your friends and your families from your lives to face their judgment?"

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

At first, their voices were scattered, but slowly they became united.

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

"Do you want the ones who have already taken your friends and your families from your lives to face their judgment?!" Aldrian asked again.

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

"We want it!"

"Good. That's a good spirit. Embed that into your hearts. Keep that fury inside you and direct it toward the ones who made you experience the loss of your loved ones. That is why I am here, to help you get your revenge. Although I do not know you, and you do not know me, our purposes are the same. To give those devils the death they deserve!" Aldrian shouted.

"I come as a stranger to all of you, but on this battlefield, I will become your brother-in-arms with the same purpose and spirit. Do you permit me, Aldrian, to become your brother-in-arms, to become your friend, to join this big family?!"

"Yes, yes, yes!" the troops shouted in unity, which made Aldrian finally show his smile.

"Good. From this moment on, I am your brother, and all of you are my brothers and sisters. We will deliver that judgment, and we will make sure those devils receive it! Show them our fury!"

"UWOOO!" The troops' spirits were truly high at this moment as they were stimulated by Aldrian's words. Aldrian's charisma was truly showing its power. His figure was that of a natural-born leader who could affect the masses with his words alone.

Even the commanders felt like they wanted to shout together and charge at the devils at this very moment. However, they knew that they needed to follow the schedule already arranged by the royal family. They still had to wait until tomorrow.

Aldrian observed the troops for a moment before looking at General Zordan, who looked at him with admiration. The fact that Aldrian could affect the masses with his words alone already showed that he was used to this kind of setting.

He must have already been used to being a leader. His charisma could not be hidden and shone brightly, making many people want to follow him. That was not something built overnight.

This made Zordan wonder about Aldrian's origin. One thing he was almost certain of was that Aldrian must have come from a noble family. That noble presence around Aldrian felt natural, as if he were standing before royalty.

"Thank you, Sir Aldrian, for your help. You have already done something tremendous for my troops," Zordan said.

"No problem, General. This is what I am supposed to do. And you do not have to worry about spies anymore, as there are no spies left in your army. Well, that is if these thousands of troops are already all of your forces," Aldrian replied.

Zordan nodded and then looked at the high-ranking commanders behind.

"Anyway, let me introduce you to some of the commanders who will lead brigade-level troops." Zordan then introduced each of the commanders to Aldrian.

The commanders' gazes toward Aldrian had already changed to ones of respect and even fear.

There was no doubt about his ability, and his display of mysterious heavens' pressure earlier made them unwilling to underestimate him, despite Aldrian's cultivation being much lower compared to most of them.

"General, could we discuss tomorrow's attack? I would like to know about the strategy, and I also want to add a few things to it," Aldrian said to Zordan.

"Of course, Sir Aldrian. Let us discuss it in my tent. It would be better if all the commanders also attended. Is that okay?" Zordan asked.

"Of course, as it should be," Aldrian replied.

Later, with all of the commanders, they discussed tomorrow's strategy inside General Zordan's tent.

A few hours later, on the other side of the forest near the mountainous range, the devils' camp was also on standby. They were stationed there while waiting for the order to advance from their higher-ups, which could come at any time.

The leader of the devil division stationed there was a peak pseudo-immortal stage devil. He was a middle-aged man with long red hair that draped over his head like flames. His terrifying aura made him look like a living blaze that could burn anything. He was a powerful cultivator who had caused great damage to the alliance forces.

Inside his tent, he sat quietly with his eyes closed, as if he had nothing to do. Suddenly, someone entered. It was a young woman wearing a black robe that covered her entire body.

The moment she entered, the leader opened his eyes. The woman instantly knelt.

"There is news from one of the spies. The alliance forces will attack the camp tomorrow night," she said in a soft voice.

The leader smiled upon hearing that. The spies working inside the enemy's camp truly made all of his tasks much easier. All of their information had been accurate so far, allowing him to strategize precisely and counter the enemy's movements effectively. That was also why he had won many battles against them.

But then his mind wandered. Why would they choose to attack tomorrow night? Were they planning something?

The leader snorted as he thought about the enemy's effort. Although he was curious about why those bastards suddenly rushed to attack with a large number of troops, which was not their usual behavior, he did not think too much about it.

They might try to use a different strategy, but as long as he was already prepared, he could deal great damage to the enemies, enough to make them think twice in the future before attacking again.

He had already prepared for the enemy's attack, and if they attacked tomorrow night, then he could prepare even more. But for now, he still had time, and he could at least enjoy some peace before another battle came to him.

The leader looked at the woman for a moment before he gave her an order.

"Strip."

The woman did not hesitate. She instantly removed her robe, leaving not even a single layer of cloth to cover her, revealing her naked, voluptuous body to him. His eyes instantly turned lustful, and his little brother hardened.

Without waiting any further, he pulled the woman toward him and instantly kissed her while playing with her body. Not long after, the woman's erotic moans could be heard even outside the tent, as if the leader did not care whether what they were doing could be heard by others.

The other devils who heard it did not mind and simply continued with what they were doing, as they were already used to it. They sometimes did the same thing anyway, and they did not find it shameful. To them, it only showed that they could satisfy their partner, something they considered worthy of bragging about.

On the next day, when the sun had not yet shown itself to the world, the leader was still lying on the bed inside his tent with the same woman. Their bodies were still naked after the erotic activity they had done all night.

As the leader was still closing his eyes, suddenly—

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

- Chapter 1037 - 1037: First Victory

Chapter 1037 - 1037: First Victory

[1,596 words]

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The sound of many explosions shook the land and awakened the leader of the devils in this place. He opened his eyes quickly and instantly spread his spiritual sense to the maximum to see what was going on.

As his spiritual sense spread to its limit, he could sense everything, and he was truly shocked by what he sensed. The devils' camp was under attack, with a large part of the camp wiped out.

The forest they used to build the camp was flattened, killing many of his troops, and even the mountains were not spared from destruction.

The mountains were collapsing, making rumbling sounds and trembling the land, burying everything under them, including many devils stationed there.

With the chaos and destruction everywhere, thousands of devils were already dead without any resistance. The leader could sense the remnants of strong energy and sword will that even made his spiritual sense tremble across the place full of destruction.

Half of his camp had already been destroyed in this attack, which was a truly devastating blow.

The leader's expression turned furious as he instantly got up with his naked body. The woman had also already woken up, and she followed her lord.

A devil panic-stricken entered the tent and instantly knelt.

"My lord! We are under attack! There are already many casualties on our side!" he said hurriedly.

"I know. I already sensed it. Spread the word to all commanders to create defensive formations. Do not leave their posts and fight any attacker who tries to advance in our direction," the leader said.

"Yes, my lord," the man said before he ran outside.

The leader was already wearing his clothes using his energy, as it was much faster for now. His eyes were glistening and he gritted his teeth at the sudden attack. Why were they suddenly under attack?

Didn't the spies' report say that the attack would happen tonight? How could the spies not report anything regarding this? Even if there was a surprise attack, how could those bastards bypass his camp's traps and defensive formations so easily?

But then, after sensing the remnants of powerful energy, as if many peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators were attacking at the same time in various places, he did not find it surprising. They must have used brute force to destroy all the formations he prepared.

But it made him question how they knew his formations' locations. Why did the scouts spread between their base and his base not give any sign of the enemy's arrival?

He did not think further as he decided to repel the attack first and think about other things later. He flew into the still dark sky, as the sun had not yet appeared on the eastern horizon. He looked into the distance and saw that the alliance force, with the strength of tens of thousands of troops, was advancing toward his direction at great speed.

They did not have time for any preparation at all, as the enemy troops were already reaching their camp.

"Kill those bastards! Don't let any of them live!" one of the alliance force's commanders shouted.

"UWOOO!"

The troops of the alliance force that arrived first instantly fell into action and began killing. The devils, still disoriented and unprepared, fell into chaos and panic as the alliance troops entered the camp.

The leader of the devils saw his peer, General Zordan, among them, and the general flew toward his direction. He gritted his teeth as he took out a halberd from his storage ring and dashed toward General Zordan.

Zordan, seeing his target, smiled as he swept his sword toward the leader of the devils.

TRANG!

The loud sound of the clash between halberd and sword resounded in the sky, creating a strong gust of wind that spread across the mountain region.

"You bastard!" the devils' leader shouted as he pushed the halberd hard to make Zordan fall back. However, Zordan also pushed with the same strength and smiled at him.

"How is it, Redik? How is my surprise for you? Do you like it?" Zordan said in a mocking tone, which made the devil leader named Redik even more furious.

"Aarrhhh!" he roared as he pushed Zordan away and blasted out a strong aura, which made Zordan take some distance.

"You must have really trusted those spies, to think that you fell for the trick of false information," Zordan said as he prepared to unleash his technique.

Hearing Zordan, Redik widened his eyes in astonishment. False information? Did that mean his spies betrayed him?

No, that was impossible. Those spies were special individuals who had extreme loyalty to the Devil God and were ready to die for their mission. They would commit suicide instead of thinking of betrayal.

Then was it because those spies got caught and their memories had been searched? But those spies had seals inside their minds that would instantly kill them if there was even a little foreign energy that touched them.

He could not think much further as Zordan had already unleashed his technique, slashing his sword repeatedly, which made him defend.

Below their battle, the woman who had just slept with Redik was also fighting against Kuartin. The battle of the Immortal Transition Realm destroyed everything in their surroundings, so the camp that was already in chaos fell into even more chaos, destroying more of the camp and killing many of the unprepared devils.

Because the devils had already lost most of their troops and the alliance force came in overwhelming numbers, the devils could not give much resistance. They were killed by the combined attacks of many alliance troops.

Some of the devils tried to escape, but they were killed before they could move far by the slash energy that came from the sword of a figure.

The figure was like a killing machine that could not be stopped. He just flew slowly, but each time he slashed with his sword, it claimed many devils. His movements seemed simple but fast, and that was enough to kill every devil near him.

"Stop that bastard! Anyone!"

"Attack him together!"

Many devils tried to attack the figure, but he did not seem to care and kept slashing and slashing, destroying and destroying. All resistance was futile. All power was meaningless.

Even one of the high-ranking commanders of the devils at the low pseudo-immortal stage tried to kill the figure.

"Die!" the devil shouted as he unleashed his flame technique through his palm. The flame was so intense and powerful, with a vast area of effect, as if it tried to burn the entire forest. But the figure only stopped for a moment before he also unleashed his own technique.

The moment he unleashed his slash technique, the flame split, and the devil who unleashed it split as well, which truly shocked him. The last thing he saw was the figure's red hair and calm blue eyes before he died, his body slashed a few more times.

The alliance troops who saw Aldrian, who seemed unstoppable, felt their hearts tremble. No one could go near him. Not even a technique could affect his clothes. He cut down everything in his path.

And then they finally saw Aldrian unleashing his technique again. They felt something from the high sky beyond the clouds, and a split second later, they saw a rain of swords, which made them shocked and run away to evade the rain of swords' destructive reach.

That was because this technique could even kill peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators easily!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The battlefield truly fell into chaos, which made some battles stop as they looked in Aldrian's direction.

The technique just now was truly powerful!

Even Redik and Zordan were slightly distracted and looked in Aldrian's direction for a split moment, and Aldrian's surroundings had already turned into a carnage area.

There were no living beings there, only the remnants of devils surrounded by powerful sword will.

Redik, who clearly sensed the powerful energy and sword will, realized that this man must be the one who caused his camp's destruction earlier. He was the one who first attacked the camp.

Zordan took advantage of Redik being distracted and attacked him.

"Bastard!" Redik roared as he almost suffered a fatal injury to his chest, if not for blocking the sword attack by a small margin.

But before he could think further, he felt something from behind him, and it was already too late for him to react.

A sword suddenly pierced his chest from behind, which made him widen his eyes. He looked at Zordan in front of him, and suddenly Zordan's figure dissipated as if it were only an illusion.

'Shit, I was careless. In that split second, I already fell into his illusion technique.'

That split second moment was already enough to decide the result of the battle. Redik, distracted by Aldrian's technique, fell into a simple trick, and it sealed his fate.

"Go to hell," Zordan said as he moved the sword upward, splitting Redik from chest to head.

Redik, who had been Zordan's headache for years, finally died by his hand.

Zordan smirked and shouted,

"The enemy's leader has been killed! Kill the rest of the devils!"

"UWOO!"

The morale of the alliance force soared, and the opposite happened to the devils. Their morale collapsed, and most tried to escape or commit suicide by blowing themselves up.

However, Aldrian did not allow them to. With his precise control, he killed them using sword's slash or his space laws.

It did not take long for the alliance force to take care of the rest of the devils.

After making sure that there were no living devils left, Zordan lifted his sword.

"We win!"

"WOOO!" All the troops shouted in victory, and their voices could be heard far and wide.

This was their first victory in their counterattack to take back all of their lost territory.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1038 - 1038: Coming on His Own

[1,574 words]

After the swift battle, the alliance troops started to clean the battlefield. Aldrian and the other commanders gathered to talk about the battle.

"Sir Aldrian, your plan was working and it gave us a swift victory," General Zordan said and then sighed.

"But I'm truly surprised that you could unleash a technique as powerful as that. The technique gave me goosebumps with how powerful it was. How could you shape that many swords with the power of the peak pseudo immortal stage? And you unleashed it twice even. I thought the energy consumption must be crazy."

"Yes, Sir Aldrian did not even look disturbed or tired after unleashing that kind of technique. Is Sir Aldrian really just at middle pseudo immortal establishment stage? If Sir Aldrian were a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator, I would believe it," one of the commanders commented.

"I thought that maybe Sir Aldrian did not need our help at all. With how Sir Aldrian could unleash something like that, even if that bastard Redik could come alive again, he would die in no time, thousands of times," another commented, which made some of them chuckle.

"You are exaggerating, Sir Ruzel. I still need the troops' help for the battle," Aldrian replied with a smile.

"Aish, Sir Aldrian is being too humble. We could clearly see that Sir Aldrian was still not going all out, and you had already wiped out huge numbers of devils, tens of thousands of them, in one go. That was truly a sight to behold."

Aldrian could only smile at how these people were trying to give a good impression of themselves to him. This kind of treatment truly happened anywhere once someone showed their power and worth.

He was powerful and had also contributed greatly to the victory of this battle, which made these people think that he was worth getting acquainted with and building a connection.

The battle worked as he had planned, with him sending false information to the devils' camp. Thanks to knowing how the spies worked through the memories of the spies he had killed, he could contact the devils' camp and make it seem like it was the spies who were giving the information.

With the false information, the devils lowered their guards, and the element of surprise worked perfectly here.

However, another challenge was that the devils had laid many traps across the surroundings of their camp. Even defensive formations that could block pseudo immortal stage cultivators were placed around the camp and were always active.

Normally, even if they could launch a surprise attack, they would still need some time to destroy the barrier, which would give the devils ample time to prepare.

That was why, to not give any of those devils a chance, Aldrian unleashed Swords Apocalypse to destroy all the formations while killing many devils at the same time. With the devils falling into chaos and panic, the alliance forces could easily destroy them.

Actually, Aldrian could have wiped out the entire camp if he wanted. However, he thought that he needed to give the troops their chance to battle. He wanted to give them the chance to take their revenge, to unleash their fury toward the devils and give themselves peace of heart.

He only acted as support to give those troops the satisfaction of killing devils.

The devils had no hope of escaping the situation other than death, and their victory in this battle was guaranteed with little casualties.

An hour later, Prince Martis was in another region of the battlefield, waiting for news regarding the first counterattack launched by General Zordan. He was inside his tent, looking at the map on the board when a man in knight armor entered the tent and instantly fell to one knee.

"Your Highness, my apologies for disturbing you, but we have received news from General Zordan."

Hearing that, the prince looked at the man.

"What is it?"

The man showed a smile. "It's a great success, Your Highness. It's a great victory. The devils in the Luger family territory are no more, and General Zordan is preparing to advance further to pass the Bervos River. Also, General Zordan achieved the victory with little casualties."

Hearing that, Prince Martis widened his eyes in surprise. A complete victory with little casualties? And from the looks of it, the battle was also quite swift, considering the

news arrived now when the sun had only just risen. General Zordan's troops must have attacked the devils while the sky was still dark.

Little casualties meant that their element of surprise had worked, which also meant that they had somehow evaded the devils' spies who had infiltrated their troops.

Prince Martis knew and did not deny that the devils had sent many spies across their forces, hiding among the troops. It would have been difficult to evade their observation, and achieving surprise would not have been easy.

He had already prepared for large casualties because the devils would have been prepared for their counterattack, thanks to the spies.

If General Zordan had a way to evade those spies' observation, then he needed to know how he did it.

"Is there anything else?" the prince asked.

"The complete report from General Zordan will arrive later after his troops are done taking care of the aftermath of the battle. There is something that he wants to tell Your Highness. That's all General Zordan said," the man replied.

Prince Martis could not help but feel curious about what General Zordan wanted to tell him.

He nodded. "Alright, you may return to your post."

"Yes, Your Highness," the man replied before walking out of the tent.

Prince Martis looked at the map with a smile and made a sign of X on the map where General Zordan's troops were positioned, using red ink.

'It looks like I need to wait for Sir Zordan's report first before we launch another attack. I need to know how he handled the spies problem,' he thought.

The aftermath of the battle for General Zordan's troops was taken care of quickly. The remnants of the devils were burned, and if there were any treasures, they were collected. The destroyed forest was also restored with newly grown trees.

Normally, they did not have anyone who could regrow trees this quickly. Only races that had a close connection to the forest, like elves, could do something like that, as they had comprehended the wood element.

They had never heard of someone other than those special races mastering the wood element, including humans.

However, that knowledge was shattered today, as many people witnessed a human using the wood element to grow trees rapidly. Aldrian could use the wood element like an elf, which gave them yet another surprise.

This caused many to wonder if Aldrian was a half-blood elf.

Aldrian still became the topic of discussion after the various things he did, which made the troops admire and respect him. Not only did he take care of the spies problem, but he was also a powerful cultivator. The sight of him easily killing many devils, no matter how many or how strong came at him, was still vivid in their memories.

There was no one who could stop him, and he did not seem tired at all. It was as if he were a slaughter machine that would not stop before all the devils were gone.

That was also what General Zordan wrote in the report he was creating at this moment, which would later be sent to Prince Martis. He had to inform the prince about Aldrian's existence, which could help in their war.

While he was still writing inside his tent, suddenly a person entered, which prompted him to look at the newcomer. The moment he looked at the figure, he raised his eyebrows in surprise before smiling.

"Oh, Marquess Beruin, it's truly surprising for you to visit this place," he said as he stopped writing.

Marquess Beruin also showed a smile. "I'm sorry to disturb you, General. Well, I wanted to visit my elite brigade, and it would not be good if I did not visit you first."

"Ahahaha, no problem, no problem. Anyway, Sir Kuartin truly made a great contribution in this war by bringing someone who became a game changer. That man could search for the devils' spies among us without fail, which made our victory possible without much difficulty. Sir Kuartin deserves to be rewarded, Marquess Beruin," Zordan said.

Marquess Beruin put on a surprised expression. "Is that so? Then it looks like I need to see him as soon as possible. If Kuartin is really as the General said, of course I will reward him."

"Yes, you should, Marquess Beruin. Go meet with Sir Kuartin."

"Then excuse me." Marquess Beruin then left the tent and walked toward the camp where the Lion Brigade stayed. As he walked, he felt confused as he thought about the current situation.

'To think that General Zordan's troops could win this easily, and I could not sense any spies here. Just as expected, the spies here have already been eliminated, and because of that, our troops here were caught by surprise.'

He came here the moment he heard about General Zordan's victory, which was said to have been achieved with little casualties and in a swift battle. He knew that these kinds of clues showed that something was wrong with the spies.

His eyes turned grim.

'From what Zordan said, there is someone who can find our spies. Damn it, to think that there is someone like that. It's the worst possibility. I need to see for myself who this person is first, and then think about how to eliminate them later.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1039 - 1039: Not a Devil?

[1,574 words]

After walking for a few minutes, Marquess Beruin finally reached the Lion Brigade camp. The moment the troops of the Lion Brigade saw him, they instantly stood up.

"My lord."

"Hmm," Marquess Beruin replied as he kept walking. He then saw Kuartin, who seemed to be taking a rest while cleaning his sword.

He approached Kuartin, and Kuartin, sensing his arrival, instantly stood up.

"My lord."

"Kuartin, I heard from General Zordan that you did a great job and contributed greatly in this battle. Good job. But why did you not tell me that you had already come back from Abrum?" Marquess Beruin said with a slight smile.

"Thank you, my lord. It's just that I was truly fortunate to meet someone who could help us in this war," Kuartin replied.

"And my apologies for not telling you earlier about my return. The situation at that time made me refrain from contacting you because of the spies problem, my lord. I only intended to contact you after this."

Every time Kuartin saw that smile since his lord changed in character, he felt something strange, as if it looked fake. Now that there was a possibility that the person in front of him was not his lord but a devil, it made him feel fury and disgust toward this unknown man.

"I see. Then what happened to the town lord of Abrug? Who was the one that killed him? Was it the devils?" Marquess Beruin asked again.

"About that, this is something that is connected to the person that I brought here, my lord. Well, he was the one who killed the town lord, and he has justification for doing so, my lord. Even I could not do anything about it."

Marquess Beruin frowned. "What? Then why did you bring him here? You should have brought him to the main family for judgment much earlier."

Seeing his lord's reaction, once again Kuartin felt that this man was not his lord. The man in front of him did not ask about the reason why the town lord was killed. He simply judged that Aldrian needed to be brought to the main family for judgment.

If it were the past, before his lord changed, then he would have asked some questions first before judging something. Now it was as if his lord only wanted to blame Aldrian and him without pointing out what was wrong with the town lord.

It made him grow even angrier, but he tried to calm himself down. He slightly bowed.

"My apologies, my lord, but you may meet him first and judge later. Even if he is in the wrong, there is no way I could bring him to the main family if he refused to do so. He is a powerful cultivator who could wipe out our family if he wanted to."

Marquess Beruin frowned deeper.

"He is that strong? Where did he come from?"

Kuartin shook his head. "This subject has no idea, my lord. He never stated his origin, but from my observation, it is obvious that he is not from our kingdom."

Marquess Beruin's expression turned pensive for a moment before he looked at Kuartin again.

"Where is he? I want to see him."

"Ah, this way, my lord. He is in the tent." Kuartin then led Marquess Beruin to the tent where Aldrian was staying. His eyes glistened as he looked forward. Now that his lord would meet Aldrian, the moment of truth would finally be confirmed.

After walking for a few moments, Kuartin stopped in front of the tent and looked at Marquess Beruin.

"Please wait, my lord. I will—"

"Please enter, Sir Kuartin, and you may bring him in." Aldrian's voice cut off Kuartin's words, which made him pause before nodding. He then entered the tent, followed by Marquess Beruin.

Marquess Beruin finally met Aldrian, and it left him stunned. His reaction was the same as the others, as he did not expect Aldrian's young appearance. However, there was something that unsettled him deep in his heart.

Something about the way Aldrian looked at him at that moment gave him a bad feeling.

Despite sensing that Aldrian only had pseudo Immortal Establishment Stage cultivation, he just could not get rid of the unease in his heart. Usually, he would underestimate anyone at Aldrian's level, but at this moment he could not do so.

It was truly strange.

Aldrian showed his smile to Marquess Beruin. His blue eyes made him look amicable, but at that moment he was observing the marquess entirely.

He was quite surprised when he checked the marquess through the system because the person in front of him was actually not a devil!

He was only a normal cultivator and not a devil like what he had suspected.

However, he did not instantly conclude that the man in front of him was free from the devils' influence because there was something strange that he could sense from him. He could sense karma laws faintly exuding from Marquess Beruin.

"This is Sir Aldrian, my lord. He is the one many have talked about, the one who flushed out the devils' spies. General Zordan truly thinks highly of him," Kuartin introduced Aldrian to his lord.

Aldrian put aside his observation for a moment as he stood up, while Marquess Beruin showed his smile and offered his hand for a handshake.

"So Sir Aldrian is the one many have talked about, the one who made the victory of this battle achieved much more easily with little casualties and caught the devils' spies. It is truly an honor to meet you," he said.

Aldrian, still wearing his smile, took the handshake.

"You must be Marquess Beruin. I have also heard about you. But is Your Excellency truly honored to meet me? I thought you wanted to judge me because I killed one of the town lords inside Your Excellency's territory, or at least that is what I heard," he replied, which made Marquess Beruin and Kuartin stunned.

Kuartin was truly astonished by Aldrian's bluntness. Aldrian had actually heard their conversation earlier, and he clearly did not care about his lord's feelings at all!

He simply said whatever he wanted, openly jabbing Marquess Beruin with sarcasm.

Marquess Beruin, who did not expect Aldrian's bluntness, felt offended.

Aldrian was mocking him with those words!

However, he held his anger and kept his smile.

"Sir Aldrian must be joking. I did not intend to do that. That was only my impulsive and natural reaction to anyone who killed one of the officials inside my territory. Sir Aldrian must know that any noble would react the same way as I did, right?"

Aldrian nodded. "You are right, Your Excellency. I am sorry if my joke went too far. I am just used to it," he said as he released the handshake.

"No problem, Sir Aldrian. I understand."

Aldrian then took a seat again. "Please have a seat, Your Excellency."

Marquess Beruin then sat in another vacant seat and looked at Kuartin.

"You may return to what you were doing. I want to speak with Sir Aldrian privately."

Kuartin glanced at his lord and then at Aldrian before nodding.

"Yes, my lord." He then left the tent.

After Kuartin left, Marquess Beruin spoke again.

"So, I heard that Sir Aldrian is not from this kingdom. May I know where Sir Aldrian came from?"

"Yes, I did not come from this kingdom. As for my origin, my apologies, but for now I cannot say it. But Your Excellency does not have to worry, as my origin is not from a dubious place," Aldrian replied in a slightly joking tone.

"I see. Then, Sir Aldrian, I want to know the reason why you killed the town lord of Abrug, whom I personally appointed. Did you have any problem with him somewhere before that I did not know about?" Marquess Beruin asked again.

"Oh, no. We had never met before, and my visit to Abrug not long ago was the first time I saw him. I just happened to learn about his bad behavior, which made me kill him without hesitation. Do you know that he was doing many bad things in the town that could tarnish the Beruin family's reputation?" Aldrian answered.

Marquess Beruin gritted his teeth inwardly. Of course, he knew what kind of things Town Lord Agerus did in his town. He had simply let it happen because he wanted it that way.

However, the fact that Aldrian did not hesitate to kill him showed that he had no respect for him, and this made him angry. It was as if Aldrian did not care about the consequences and simply did whatever was in his mind.

"But Sir Aldrian, do you not think that killing him without informing my family about the town lord's sins was inappropriate? There is a rule in our family that we must judge those who commit crimes before enacting punishment," Marquess Beruin said.

Aldrian nodded. "That is true, but considering the sins he had already committed, I doubt the Beruin family would not give him the death penalty. So I merely hastened the punishment so that you would not have to deal with it yourself, Your Excellency. I helped the Beruin family by eradicating him."

'Fucking bastard. There is no doubt, he is trying to mess with me!'

For Aldrian to say all that bullshit so calmly, it was obvious that whatever he said regarding this matter would fall on deaf ears. The most important thing to Aldrian was that the town lord was dead.

"Anyway, Your Excellency, it is my turn to ask something," Aldrian suddenly said, which made Marquess Beruin put aside his fury.

"What is it, Sir Aldrian?"

"Are you really Marquess Beruin?" Aldrian asked with a smile.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1040 - 1040: Still Can Be Saved

[1,615 words]

"Are you really Marquess Beruin?" Aldrian asked with a smile.

That question alone was enough to make Marquess Beruin's heart skip a beat, and he felt his body turn cold. His mind instantly thought about whether he should launch a surprise attack and kill Aldrian at this moment, but he held himself back.

'Could this guy tell that I'm different? No, that is impossible. I'm different from those spies. Whatever this man's ability is, there is no way he could tell that I'm not the real Marquess Beruin. My body is his real body after all,' he thought.

However, he still tried to adjust his body's metabolism and reactions so as not to make Aldrian suspicious.

He frowned instead. "What do you mean, Sir Aldrian? Of course I'm real. Why are you asking me like that? Are you suspecting that I'm not real and that I'm a devil spy?" His expression clearly showed that he felt truly offended.

"Ah, no, Your Excellency. I'm just joking. Just like I said, I like to joke around. I'm just that type of guy. Even when I'm facing my prey, I'm still joking with them or teasing them. It's just my habit, which is difficult to erase. So my apologies if I offended you," Aldrian replied with a smile, and his tone sounded as though he was truly remorseful.

Marquess Beruin truly couldn't tell whether Aldrian meant what he said or not, and that was one thing that made his heart even more unsettled. Normally, he could fool anyone with his words and natural acting, but he was not sure if he could fool Aldrian.

He did not know the extent of Aldrian's ability or what Aldrian was thinking, so it made him always feel on edge.

"You better not always joke like that, Sir Aldrian. You will offend many people if you keep doing that," he said, still wearing a frown.

Aldrian still smiled and nodded. "That's true, Your Excellency. Well, I've already offended many people in the past anyway, and luckily I'm still alive today."

Marquess Beruin released a sigh and calmed his expression. "You better not make that kind of joke in front of me, Sir Aldrian. That is a bad joke for me. I don't like to be mentioned in the same sentence as those devil bastards."

Aldrian nodded. "I will keep that in mind."

There was a slight silence before Marquess Beruin continued. "Anyway, I'm really curious. How could you find out about the devil spies? They were truly cunning and slippery. They used a kind of unknown method that made them no different from us and unable to be detected by any artifact. Is this your innate ability or something?"

Aldrian smiled. "Well, I just know that they are devils. I cannot explain it, as it is difficult to describe, but I can differentiate devils from others. No matter how deeply they try to hide themselves from me, I can still tell that they are devils." He said it while his gaze looked directly into the marquess' eyes.

The reflection of the marquess could clearly be seen in Aldrian's eyes, and the marquess slightly averted his gaze. He felt nervous inside, but he masked it with a knowing expression.

Marquess Beruin nodded. "I see. From the looks of it, Sir Aldrian truly has sharp instincts toward devils, and maybe that is your innate ability. That is a truly useful ability against any devil, which makes them unable to hide among us." He then sighed.

"I'm glad that we have someone like you, Sir Aldrian. We already had a big headache because of the spy problem, and it seems the heavens sent you to us to solve it."

"I just want to help the alliance, and although I'm late, it seems I still came at a good time," Aldrian replied.

There was another moment of awkward silence before Marquess Beruin spoke.

"Anyway, I will have to go for now. I need to return to my family's troops in another region," he said as he stood up.

"It's been truly a pleasure to meet you, Sir Aldrian, as I could finally see for myself the person who has become the hot topic among the alliance troops. I hope that Sir Aldrian can keep supporting us." He offered a handshake.

Aldrian also stood up. "Of course, Your Excellency. I will keep helping the alliance until there are no devils left in this world—no, even until there is no existence called devils anymore." He said it as he took the handshake.

"That is a good spirit, Sir Aldrian."

A moment later, Marquess Beruin had already stepped out of the tent and walked away with a fast pace. Sweat finally fell from his forehead as he felt his chest was about to burst from all the nervousness he had been holding back.

'Fuck, to think that I would feel nervous in front of someone,' his eyes glistened and he gritted his teeth inwardly.

'That guy is dangerous, truly dangerous! I need to do something about him, or we might face a threat never seen before in this world!'

Aldrian, who was still inside the tent, smiled as he thought about his conversation with Marquess Beruin. He had also finally learned what truly happened to the marquess after observing him thoroughly.

It was true that the marquess was the real one. He was not a devil, at least not physically.

What Aldrian sensed inside the marquess, more specifically inside his soul, told him otherwise. A foreign influence was covering it, making his soul look foreign inside his own body.

His soul was like that of a different person placed inside the marquess' body.

There was also a foreign karmic thread connected to the void, which should not have been there.

Those signs made Aldrian think of one thing.

Possession.

The marquess' body was being possessed by a devil, and the devil itself was in a different location.

'It's no wonder he dared to meet me. He thinks he is different from those spies and believes that I will not find out,' Aldrian thought. With the discussion about him being able to find the devil spies, the most reasonable decision for the devils would have been not to meet him at all.

However, Marquess Beruin came to him on his own, which showed his confidence in his possession trick, which was unfortunately useless in front of Aldrian.

He guessed that in the past, Marquess Beruin must have touched something that became the medium through which his soul could be possessed by a devil.

As he was still thinking about the marquess' situation, Kuartin entered the tent.

"My apologies, Sir Aldrian, but how is it? Is he really a devil?" he asked after entering the tent.

"Well, no and yes," Aldrian replied, which made Kuartin confused.

"What do you mean, Sir Aldrian?"

"His body itself is Marquess Beruin. There is no doubt about that. However, someone is taking control of his body, or what you call possession. From what I sensed in his soul, it is clear that there is a devil's trace there," Aldrian replied, which made Kuartin surprised.

"Possession?" Kuartin narrowed his eyes. "Then what about Lord Vergas' true consciousness? Can he still be saved or...?"

"He still can be saved. Although his soul is under the devil's influence, I can still sense traces of Marquess Beruin's true consciousness. That means what this devil did to the marquess is not total possession that kills the host's consciousness, but only seizes his body and influences his soul and mind," Aldrian said.

Kuartin couldn't help but release a sigh of relief. "I see. That's great. At least there is hope to save him, although it is still uncertain." But then he looked at Aldrian with a confused gaze.

"Sir Aldrian, if you know that Lord Vergas is possessed by a devil, why are you letting him go? Isn't it dangerous if we just let him be? What if he is planning something against you after this?"

Aldrian smiled. "I let him go so as not to alert the other spies who are like him. I suspect that there are others like him, and it is much better if we do not alert them for now. This is to prevent any desperate measures from those devils that could cause harm to the alliance troops."

"Let them think whatever they want about me. If they make me their primary target and make their move, then let them come. I will gladly receive them. How could I not be happy if the devils come on their own without me having to look for them?"

Kuartin sighed. This was the first time he had heard someone sound so relaxed and even happy about becoming the target of the devils. With how many tricks and how cunning the devils were, becoming their target was a nightmare.

But seeing how powerful Aldrian was, he thought that he had the right to be that arrogant. Maybe those devils would use cunning methods to harm Aldrian because they did not dare to face him head-on, but he felt that Aldrian must have already anticipated that.

After they finished discussing Marquess Beruin's matter, Kuartin left the tent.

After this, they needed to pack the entire camp, for their troops would advance forward to a much deeper position inside the devils' occupied territory. They would build a new base that would push the front line much further from the current position.

As they were still preparing, General Zordan suddenly approached the Lion Brigade, who were still packing their tents. This caused the troops to stand at attention as the general passed by them.

Aldrian, who could sense the general coming toward him, stopped what he was doing. He had been helping with packing the tent and turned to look at the general.

Zordan smiled at him.

"My apologies if I have to disturb your activities, Sir Aldrian, but there is someone who wants to meet you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1041 - 1041: Intense Shock

[1,672 words]

Aldrian wondered who the one that wanted to meet with him were, for even General Zordan himself had told him personally.

Aldrian nodded. "Alright."

Zordan then led Aldrian towards the temporary warp gate in the base. In front of the warp gate, Aldrian could see a man in armor already waiting. He could see the same symbol as the one on General Zordan's armor engraved on this man's armor.

The symbol of the Royal family.

As the man saw Aldrian and General Zordan, he observed Aldrian for a moment with a curious gaze.

"This is Sir Aldrian that everyone talked about," Zordan said to the man.

After hearing the confirmation, the man slightly bowed. "Sir Aldrian, I'm the envoy sent by His Highness the First Prince of the Gardum Kingdom, Martis Veradin Gardum. His Highness the First Prince would like to meet with you at this moment."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. It looked like his achievement in this place had already reached the highest authority, and they had even quickly sent an invitation to meet him.

This showed how they found his achievement to be a big deal, for even the First Prince wanted to meet with him at this moment.

"Alright, I also would like to meet with the First Prince," Aldrian replied.

The envoy nodded. "Thank you. Now let's get going. Your Highness is already waiting for Sir Aldrian." The envoy then looked at General Zordan.

"Sir Zordan could stay here. Let me be the one that escorts Sir Aldrian. Sir Zordan must be quite busy at this moment with the advance movement."

Zordan nodded. "Well, that's true. Then Sir Aldrian, you could follow the envoy by yourself."

A moment later, Aldrian and the envoy stepped into the warp gate, and they stepped out in a different environment. Aldrian appeared in the desert. A vast flat desert that spanned until the horizon.

The warp gate was located inside a big camp that was much bigger than General Zordan's troops' camp, which was a sign that the number of troops stationed here was much larger.

As the envoy guided Aldrian to where the First Prince was staying, Aldrian observed his surroundings. The troops here looked much stronger on average, and many of them were bearing the flag of the royal family. There were also some from other families, and they were also strong, with even middle Pseudo Immortal stage cultivators among them.

The biggest tent in the camp was erected in the center and became the most important place of the camp, as this was where the First Prince stayed and also served as the command center. After a few minutes of walking, they finally arrived at where the First Prince stayed.

The royal guards surrounded the tent in a circle, forming a tight guard and ensuring that nothing and no one could enter or leave without their watch. All of the guards were in the Immortal Transition Realm.

The guards, knowing who the envoy was, instantly let him in with Aldrian following behind. After they entered the tent, Aldrian could see a large table and a board showing a large map of the kingdom. There were already many scribbles on the map, which showed the troops' movements.

Aldrian's gaze also fell onto the handsome young man wearing armor, sitting on a chair with a table before him and a vacant chair already prepared across it. He seemed to be enjoying his tea with a serene expression that could attract any woman.

Without the envoy even having to introduce who this young man was, Aldrian already knew who he was. As he observed the prince, the prince also looked at Aldrian, and just like many others who saw Aldrian for the first time, he was stunned by how young Aldrian was.

Before he could observe further, the envoy bowed to the prince.

"Your Highness, I have brought Sir Aldrian."

Prince Martis nodded. "Thank you, Charles. Now you may return to your post."

"Yes, Your Highness." The envoy then stepped out of the tent.

The moment only the prince and Aldrian remained, Prince Martis smiled towards Aldrian as he approached him.

"So you are Sir Aldrian, the one that I heard has contributed tremendously to our victory against the devils armies in the Luger family territory. It's good to see you, Sir Aldrian."

"I just do what I'm supposed to do, Your Highness. It's only right for me to help get rid of those devils." Aldrian replied.

The prince kept his smile and gestured towards the table.

"Would you like to accompany me for tea, Sir Aldrian? I would like to know more about you."

"It will be my honor," Aldrian replied.

Aldrian then sat on the vacant chair across from Prince Martis, while the prince himself poured tea into Aldrian's cup.

"This is our special tea grown in the southern highlands. Luckily, that place is still far from the devils' influence, which allows us to still enjoy this tea without any problem," Prince Martis explained.

After he finished pouring, Aldrian looked at it for a moment and picked up the cup. He felt the warmth of the tea before taking a sip with closed eyes, enjoying the sensation of the tea entering his throat.

After a few seconds, he opened his eyes. "Truly a great tea, Your Highness. This tea must be grown in a special environment with great care. It gives a refreshing effect and also a calming effect on the mind, even for those in the Immortal Transition Realm. This tea might give benefits to anyone who wants to gain enlightenment."

"I'm glad that you like it, Sir Aldrian," the prince said before he also sipped his tea.

Aldrian also sipped the tea once more before they put down their cups.

"So, Sir Aldrian, I got a report about what you did from General Zordan, and it made me very curious. I have many questions about you."

"If Your Highness has questions, then I would gladly answer," Aldrian replied.

Prince Martis nodded. "Then where do you come from, Sir Aldrian? From what I know, I have never seen nor known someone like you in this world. From your description and abilities, there is no one in this world who fits it. If we had someone like you since the start of the war, I doubt those devils could have occupied a large part of this world."

"I'm from another world, Your Highness. Or more specifically, the Ancient Blue Gate World. Do you know where it is?" Aldrian answered, which made the prince widen his eyes in shock.

"Are you telling me about that Ancient Blue Gate World? I mean the one located in the central star cluster near the Northern Star Cluster?"

Seeing the prince's reaction, which was quite intense, Aldrian was slightly stunned, but he nodded.

"Yes, Your Highness."

The prince's eyes glistened, and his expression turned serious.

"Are the news regarding the Ancient Blue Gate World true? The one that said a mighty figure appeared in that world and brought great change to its surrounding worlds, and was even the biggest factor that made the Northern Star Cluster, which was occupied by the devils, be reclaimed and freed from the devils' grasp?"

"That's true, Your Highness," Aldrian replied.

Prince Martis released a long breath. "To think you came from that far world. How could you come here? Our world rarely has visitors from that place."

"Well, I was in the middle of my journey when a misfortune befell me that threw me into this world," Aldrian replied.

Prince Martis raised his eyebrows. "So Sir Aldrian arrived in this world by accident? Where was Sir Aldrian heading before being thrown into this world?"

"I want to go to the Central Region of Heaven."

Hearing the destination, the prince showed a shocked expression once again.

"What?! The Central Region of Heaven? Do you understand what kind of place that is?" Prince Martis truly could not hide the disbelief in his tone, and his expression showed as if Aldrian had already gone mad.

Aldrian did not change his expression and nodded with a calm gaze.

"I know what kind of place that is, but I have my purpose in going there, and I have to go there no matter what."

The prince narrowed his eyes. "May I know why Sir Aldrian wants to go to the Central Region of Heaven? That place is the most dangerous place in the First Heaven as of now because it has already become the headquarters of the devils since long ago."

"The region is filled with countless strong devils which are never seen in other places. This is the first time I have heard someone want to go to that place, which is truly bizarre." Prince Martis looked at Aldrian suspiciously.

"I want to go there to end the existence of the devils in the First Heaven once and for all," Aldrian replied without hesitation and with full confidence.

Hearing that kind of answer, delivered with such confidence and calm expression, made the prince's heart shake. The first thought that appeared in his mind was—

"Are you for real? Ending the devils' existence once and for all?"

He did not know if the man in front of him was in his right mind or not. If it were easy to end the devils' forces, they would not have reached this point where the devils could spread their influence and territory.

Isn't the man in front of him too arrogant to say such a thing? Where did he get that confidence from? Is this man underestimating the devils in the Central Region of Heaven just because he has the power to kill several thousand troops?

"Are you serious?" the prince blurted out.

Aldrian nodded. "I'm truly serious, and I know Your Highness must think that what I said is nonsense and may even think that I'm arrogant and underestimating the devils."

"However, what I can say is that there is no better time to end the devils' existence in the First Heaven than now, because the devils have already lost one of their overlords in the First Heaven after I killed the Vampire King and slaughtered his armies."

"WHAT?!"

Prince Martis stood up from his seat and hit the table, which made the tea slightly spill from the cup. This was the most intense shock he had shown so far.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1042 - 1042: Incomprehensible to Him

[1,755 words]

To the noble houses and high-level organizations of this world, the name of the Vampire King is true terror itself. A name that symbolizes strength and a powerful army.

That is because all the troops that spread across their surrounding worlds, or any worlds, bear the name of the Vampire King's troops. An unstoppable force that expands his territory without fail.

Each world, each star cluster, each galaxy, every time the troops of the Vampire King arrive, it is only a matter of time before that place turns into the devils' territory.

No matter how the inhabitants of those worlds resist, in the end, all is futile. Those devils are numerous and strong. There are even stories that some devils are much stronger than peak pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

That is only speaking about the Vampire King's troops. Then what about the Vampire King himself?

Many cannot imagine it. Some stories only say that he is a special existence, like an immortal cultivator staying in the First Heaven. No one has ever seen him, let alone witnessed his true power.

But there is a record from ancient times when the Vampire King's legend first reached their world. It tells how his power alone overwhelmed the entire world.

He is a one-man army that cannot be stopped, and once he comes, the world falls into apocalypse.

However, at this moment, a man suddenly claims that he killed that symbol of terror and his vast armies.

Prince Martis looked at Aldrian in disbelief and did not know what to think of him. He did not know whether Aldrian was lying or not, because he could not sense even a single glimpse of deceit from him.

"Are you serious, Sir Aldrian?" Prince Martis asked.

Aldrian did not say anything. Suddenly, the prince's surroundings changed into a completely different environment. He was stunned when he could no longer see Aldrian. Instead, he found himself in space. He was truly astonished, for he had suddenly appeared in a different place without being able to do anything.

'Where am I?' he thought. 'Is this an illusion? Or is this a real place?'

He turned his head to the side and was shocked by what he saw.

Before him was a massive armada of interstellar vessels, so numerous that he could not count them. This was the largest interstellar fleet he had ever seen in his life.

Then he finally saw a man who seemed to be the leader. From his features, he was clearly a vampire, and he looked furious, his aura blazing intensely. Even space itself seemed to crack under the pressure of his aura.

It was also clear that this vampire was a devil.

The prince's soul felt a chill of despair. He instantly knew that this man was far beyond his level. There was no way he or anyone from their world could face such an existence.

Moreover, behind him stood the vast armies, along with several powerful devils following him. The sight crushed the prince's heart and spirit in that moment.

How could they ever face such troops?

But suddenly, from the other side, he sensed another presence. When he looked in that direction, his shock did not lessen compared to when he saw the vampire.

He clearly saw Aldrian, and beside him stood another figure. Yet his gaze instantly lifted upward when he saw a massive avatar technique. He had to raise his head just to look at its face.

The aura exuding from the avatar did not lose to the vampire's. In his view, it was even stronger.

He just could not put aside the feeling of reverence and the urge to prostrate himself before that overwhelming aura. It was as if he stood before a much higher existence than himself, an existence worthy of his worship.

'Is this... is this Sir Aldrian's avatar?' The prince's mind truly reeled from such incomprehensible power. How could someone at middle pseudo immortal establishment stage create this kind of avatar?

A moment later, he witnessed the battle between the vampire and the man beside Aldrian. He saw how the vampire tried to attack Aldrian, yet he could not inflict any

damage because of the avatar's defense and the person beside him who was clearly a dragon in human form.

The dragon fought the vampire, and the battle was unlike anything he had ever seen. Every display of power in that moment was beyond his comprehension. A power that was truly out of this world. The only thought inside his mind was—

Are they still mortal?

As he continued watching the fight, something else shattered his understanding. He saw Aldrian create many black holes. A terrifying phenomenon that would force any cultivator, no matter how strong, to flee from it. A phenomenon that could easily kill any peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator.

He saw a black hole grow larger and larger until its size rivaled even his world, Revitas. A few moments later, he saw the black hole begin to lose its shape, and then—

BOOOM!

A blinding light illuminated his vision. When the light faded, he had already returned to the tent.

Aldrian was still sitting calmly on his chair, leisurely sipping his tea.

Sweat was already rolling down the prince's face, and his heartbeat remained erratic. He finally realized that what he had just experienced was only an illusion.

However, the illusion felt so real, as if he had truly been present in that moment and witnessed everything directly.

"What you just saw is what happened not long ago," Aldrian said.

After Prince Martis calmed his heart and wiped the sweat from his face, he slowly opened his lips.

"Is that... is that the Vampire King and his army?"

Aldrian put down his teacup and nodded.

"Yes, that was the Vampire King and his army. More than a week ago, they arrived at the Central Star Cluster and tried to invade the Ancient Blue Gate World. Fortunately, I was able to stop them before they even reached it."

The prince saw the calm confirmation, and his heart shook once again. But then he caught a small detail.

"Wait... more than a week ago? Then... then how did you... how are you here in such a short time? How—"

The prince felt as though his brain was about to break down. The purpose of inviting Aldrian was so he could learn more about him.

However, instead of gaining clarity, he felt as if he was losing his mind.

In this short time since meeting Aldrian, he had already experienced things beyond his understanding, things that made no sense.

"Please, sit down, Your Highness. Sit down. Arrange your thoughts and do not think too hard. You will not find the answer with your current knowledge. I am here to answer your questions. We still have time, do we not?" Aldrian said calmly.

Prince Martis took a deep breath and calmed his heart and mind for a few moments before sitting down again. His gaze toward Aldrian had already changed from curiosity to solemnity.

Could he truly trust what he had just seen?

Could he trust the man in front of him?

Perhaps it was because what he had just seen, and what he had just heard from Aldrian, were still beyond his comprehension, which made him doubt their authenticity. Those displays of power were unbelievable. And to travel from the Central Star Cluster to their world in such a short time?

He had never heard that such a thing was possible.

"It seems Your Highness still cannot entirely believe me, and I understand that." Aldrian then stood up. "With doubt in Your Highness's mind, it will not be good to continue our conversation. For that reason, I will give Your Highness a sight that will erase your doubt."

Aldrian approached the map on the board, which made the prince confused. He stopped in front of it and searched for their position until he found what he believed to be their location. He pointed at it and looked at the prince.

"Is this our location?" he asked.

The prince also stood up and looked at the point Aldrian was pointing at. He nodded.

"Yes, that is our location."

Aldrian nodded and shifted his gaze across the map toward the other side of their position. When he saw a marked area that he assumed to be the devils' camp, he pointed at it.

"This is the devils' base, correct?" Aldrian asked again, and the prince responded with another nod.

"Yes, that is correct. That is one of the strongest devils' bases within our kingdom. That base is located nine hundred kilometers northeast from our current position."

Aldrian nodded and looked at the map once more, observing the devils' base and its surroundings.

"Are there any civilians being held hostage, or anyone near the devils' base, or even within this region?" he asked.

"No. There are no civilians left in this region. We have already evacuated all of them to other regions. As for hostages, as far as I know, there are none," the prince answered.

Aldrian then tapped the mark of the devils' base twice.

"I will wipe out this devils' base, and I will do it in a way that Your Highness has never seen or experienced before," he said, which made the prince's eyes widen and his heart tremble.

But before he could say anything, he saw that Aldrian had already started walking toward the tent entrance.

"Come with me," Aldrian said.

The prince was stunned for a moment, but he quickly followed after him. Aldrian stepped out of the tent, with the prince right behind him, which caused the guards to wonder where they were going.

"Your Highness, where are you going?" one of the guards asked.

"Remain at your posts," the prince replied shortly as he continued following Aldrian.

The guards wanted to follow them, but because of the prince's order, they stayed in their positions.

As the two of them walked together, Aldrian began to draw attention, especially because the prince was following behind him. The others could not help but wonder who this person was, for the prince himself to walk behind him like that.

Even the envoy from earlier saw them and decided to follow as well.

After walking for a while, they finally arrived at the edge of the base. Aldrian slowly floated into the sky.

Prince Martis followed and floated behind him. At this moment, many people had already stopped what they were doing to look at them, curious about what their prince and that unknown man were about to do.

Aldrian looked toward the horizon, which was filled with nothing but endless flat sands. After a moment, he turned his gaze back to Prince Martis.

"The devils' base is in that direction, correct?" Aldrian asked as he pointed toward the horizon.

Prince Martis nodded. "Yes, that is correct."

Aldrian gave a slight nod and then closed his eyes.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1043 - 1043: Wipe Out

[1,612 words]

Prince Martis wondered what Aldrian was doing. Aldrian just closed his eyes for a moment before he opened them again and looked toward the horizon. He did not say anything.

The prince also did not ask anything as he wanted to see what Aldrian wanted to do.

More than ten seconds passed. He only saw Aldrian looking into the distance, still silent. Twenty seconds passed, still nothing. However, the moment it reached twenty-five seconds, he sensed something coming down from the sky. Many people also could sense it.

Prince Martis and many others instinctively lifted their heads to look at what it was, and the moment they saw it, they froze.

The prince's heart shook, his eyes trembling, as he saw a giant meteorite fall from the sky at incredible speed and split the clouds toward the horizon.

A few seconds later,

BOOOOMM!

The meteorite impacted the land, and the first thing they saw was thick, high-rising dust and a wave of flame that covered a big part of the horizon. It was followed by a great earthquake that could be felt across a vast region, and even at this moment, the entire Gardum Kingdom could feel the earthquake.

It caused panic among the citizens of the kingdom. The earthquake was quite strong and made some buildings in parts of the kingdom crack and threaten to collapse. The people rushed to look for cover to protect themselves in case the buildings collapsed.

In the capital city of the Gardum Kingdom, Hervian City, the earthquake was strong enough to make a person unable to stand properly.

Inside the royal palace, many people fell into panic as they tried to grab something to steady themselves.

In the throne hall, a middle-aged man with blonde hair and peak pseudo immortal stage cultivation stood up and looked solemn. His regal attire already showed who he was as the true ruler of the Gardum Kingdom, the king of this kingdom, Darius Veradin Gardum.

He spread his senses to the maximum, even covering the entire capital, but he did not sense any disturbance. However, he knew that this earthquake was not normal, as the capital city had never been hit by an earthquake.

'What happened?' he thought seriously.

At Aldrian's place, the camp was already in chaos because they felt the earthquake the strongest. Many tents had already collapsed and most people could not stand properly. The ones who could fly started to rise into the air, and if Aldrian had not shielded all of them from the shockwave that swept through them, the situation would have been far more chaotic.

The shockwave swept across an area of more than twenty-five thousand kilometers and almost collapsed every standing object. The shockwave itself also felt hot, as if it carried invisible flames within it.

After more than a minute of pure chaos, the trembling stopped and the people could start standing again. The terrifying rumbling sound could still be heard on the horizon as they looked at the sight they would never forget.

The dust created from the impact had already reached the upper atmosphere and was blocking the sunlight. The clouds in the vast region had already been swept away by the shockwave, making the sky entirely clear of clouds. However, because the sunlight was blocked by the thick dust from the impact, the view became quite dim.

Even so, the entire horizon was lit in a red hue as if a huge fire had broken out across a vast area in a place they could not see. The sight was truly like the end of the world.

Those who saw this scene were deeply shaken, their eyes filled with fear.

What the fuck just happened?

Why did a massive meteorite suddenly hit the land when nothing like this had happened for such a long time?

Prince Martis, who was looking at the aftermath, also showed shock and fear. Sweat had already rolled down from his forehead.

Was this what Aldrian wanted to show him?

Was this his technique? Was this his power?

Although compared to the black hole he saw in Aldrian's illusion the scale was much smaller, this was already beyond any power he had ever seen from cultivators in this world.

This was a kind of power outside of his understanding.

How could someone just make a meteorite fall from the sky?

The prince's gaze then turned to Aldrian, who was looking at the horizon with a calm expression. Prince Martis' eyes showed fear and at the same time solemnity. Even after making the giant meteorite fall, Aldrian's face did not show any sign of disturbance such as energy depletion.

His body also did not show any sign of weakness, as if what he had just done was something extremely easy.

'What a monster,' he thought.

"Would you like to come with me to take a closer look, Your Highness? I want to see the result of the impact," Aldrian suddenly said, which made the prince stunned.

Without waiting for an answer, Aldrian started flying toward the horizon.

As the people were still looking at the aftermath of the impact, they saw Aldrian flying away. Prince Martis, who seemed hesitant for a moment, decided to follow him.

"Your Highness!"

Many royal guards and troops also started to follow them as they saw the prince flying after Aldrian. They kept flying for a few seconds until they finally arrived at the impact site, which made their eyes tremble at the sight before them.

A giant crater with a diameter of five hundred kilometers and seven kilometers deep had already been created, with flames engulfing a big part of the desert. The scorching heat stung their skin and threatened to burn them even though they were not directly touching the flames.

They could not see any remnants of the meteorite, which they thought must have been entirely destroyed after the impact.

The truth was that the meteorite had already completely disappeared because it was entirely created through energy manifestation. It disappeared a few moments after the impact.

If they knew about it, they would be even more shocked, because to create something like that, the cultivator must have great control and a huge amount of energy. That did not even include what kind of laws or intricacies were involved to make it possible for a cultivator to create a giant meteorite and make it fall from the sky.

Did this meteorite come from the meteorite belt? Or somewhere else? These were the questions running through their minds.

All in all, this kind of thing was impossible to do in these people's minds.

"Wait, isn't this where the devils' camp was located? The meteorite fell right on their base?" one of the troops who was following the prince said.

"Yes, this is the place. As one of the scouts who had been watching the devils' base a few days ago, I can confirm it. This is without a doubt the devils' base. The remnants of devil energy here are already an obvious sign," another troop said.

"Were the devils entirely obliterated? The base that had more than a hundred thousand devil troops, just gone like that?" another asked in an unbelieving tone.

Aldrian, who was observing the aftermath, nodded in satisfaction as he could sense that there were no survivors. He did not sense any remnants of space laws or other laws that would indicate some devils had managed to escape. Instead, he sensed the presence of death laws and remnants of devil energy from thousands of devils.

He could even sense two remnants of energy that seemed to belong to peak pseudo immortal stage devils.

He was satisfied with the result because he had made a direct hit with the meteorite attack. He had learned much from the war in the northern star cluster and perfected his meteorite strike.

To make sure those devils did not have time to defend themselves, he made the meteorite fall at incredible speed, propelling it further using gravity.

He made the edge of his domain in the upper atmosphere, which faced the target, exude intense gravity, while holding the meteorite in place with a spatial lock.

The moment he released the spatial lock, the meteorite would fall in the designed direction.

How could he pinpoint the exact location of the devils' base?

It was his calculation based on the map he saw and the distance that had been described by Prince Martis. With his quick processing mind, he calculated the precise location where he could drop the meteorite.

Even if he had not directly hit the base, the impact alone was already enough to obliterate anything hundreds of kilometers away and destroy anything thousands of kilometers away.

If it were not for his domain's protection, the prince's camp would have been instantly swept away by the aftermath, and there would have been thousands of casualties. Even Immortal Transition Realm cultivators would have been gravely injured by it.

Prince Martis, who was observing the destruction, suddenly remembered something. Something he had not considered as a possibility.

'Wait, his name is Aldrian. The news about that mighty figure from the Ancient Blue Gate World mentioned a title, Aldrian the Great.'

The moment he reached this conclusion, his eyes widened.

Aldrian, who did not know what was in the prince's mind at this moment, then looked at Prince Martis.

"How is it, Your Highness?" he asked.

The prince looked at Aldrian with a solemn expression.

"Sir Aldrian, my apologies if I suddenly ask this, but are you the one called Aldrian the Great from the Ancient Blue Gate World?"

Aldrian raised one of his eyebrows.

"You also heard that name here?"

The prince nodded, which made Aldrian look back at the impact site.

"That is what many people called me in my home world, so you do not need to think too much about it here."

Hearing the confirmation, the prince's heart pounded and he wanted to shout in ecstasy.

He was standing in front of the rumored Aldrian the Great!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1044 - 1044: Is There Anyone That Could Do That?

[1,570 words]

Prince Martis's eyes, which were full of fear earlier, now turned into eyes of understanding. The name of Aldrian the Great was known to him and many high-level organizations in this world because of the great achievements he had accomplished.

"Sir Aldrian—no, Your Excellency, it is good to finally see you. I have already heard about your achievements, which could make even the devils tremble. To think that you are that legend." Prince Martis suddenly lowered his head, which stunned the others.

They glanced at Aldrian. They wondered if this meteorite was the doing of this man.

There was no way that a meteorite just happened to fall here, right?

And looking at how their prince behaved toward this man, that might be true.

"Please, raise your head, Your Highness. Your subordinates are watching. It would not be good for them to see you lowering your head to someone unknown. Moreover, do you really just believe what I said about being Aldrian the Great?" Aldrian said with a slight smile.

"No, this is the least I have to do." Prince Martis then lifted his head. "This is to show not only my gratefulness but also the respect I have for you. As for believing your words?"

The prince then looked at the destruction in front of them.

"I do not think this kind of power is something that could be unleashed by someone fake."

The vast region had already turned into a world of flames filled with destruction. But a second later, the people there saw all the flames die out instantly, as if the flames themselves had fulfilled their purpose of spreading destruction.

As cultivators, they knew that these flames must be controlled by someone, so their thoughts naturally pointed at Aldrian.

"If that is what you think, then now we can converse without a doubt in your heart, right, Your Highness?" Aldrian asked.

"Of course not, of course not. How could I dare to have doubt about you, Your Excellency? But I do not think we can have a conversation in the tent for now. How about I invite Your Excellency to the royal palace? That would be a good place for having a conversation." Prince Martis replied.

"Moreover, with the devils here completely wiped out, the northeastern side of the kingdom is basically already liberated from them. Our movement will be much easier, and we will have much time."

"Later, we can concentrate on the northernmost and the western side of the kingdom, where the devils still have some bases."

Aldrian smiled hearing that. "Sounds good. But before that, let me help Your Highness clean your troops of the devils' spies. I have sensed several of them since earlier."

Prince Martis widened his eyes and lowered his head. "Thank you, Your Excellency. The problem of the spies has already caused many issues for our troops. I am truly thankful if Your Excellency could help me get rid of them." He truly forgot one of the purposes of inviting Aldrian for a conversation.

Aldrian waved his hand. "No problem, Your Highness."

Not long after that, they returned to the camp and gathered the entire troops. Just like what happened in General Zordan's troops, Aldrian used the same method here.

The earthquake that could be felt by all beings across the Gardum Kingdom became the main topic of discussion, as it was an extraordinary event. Their kingdom rarely experienced earthquakes. Moreover, they had never felt one as strong as the one they had just experienced.

They wondered if the earthquake was caused by deliberate action. With the war against the devils still raging, many rumors began to spread among the populace.

It might have been caused by the devils, or it might have been caused by a great battle somewhere.

'The ones who know the cause may be the higher-ups of the kingdom,' they thought.

Unknown to them, most of those people were also confused at this moment, guessing the source of the earthquake.

The king, who was still inside his throne hall, was also waiting for incoming information that could explain the source of the earthquake.

Beside the king, his advisor, who was a middle-aged man with middle Pseudo Immortal stage cultivation, was also present. He had quickly gone to the throne hall after the earthquake to prepare for anything that might follow.

He and the king knew that this was not a normal earthquake.

After waiting for a moment, a royal knight suddenly entered the hall, and the moment he neared the throne, he went down on one knee.

"Your Majesty, there is a report from Rudon Town in the northeast that they saw a large meteor fall from the sky toward the northeast horizon. The impact of the meteor is what caused the earthquake," the knight reported.

King Darius and his advisor frowned deeply.

"A meteor? To the northeast? Isn't that toward where Martis and his troops are located?" the king said. As he said this, he could not help but feel his chest tighten.

"What about Martis and his troops? What is their status?"

"We still do not know, Your Majesty. We have not yet received any contact from His Highness's side. But we have already sent someone to check His Highness's camp."

The king's face clearly showed anxiety. His advisor also showed concern, but he was also thinking about the current situation. He knew that a meteorite hitting their land at this moment was not normal, especially when they were at war with the devils and the place where it fell happened to be in the direction of their troops.

He thought of several possibilities, and while he was still thinking about it, another knight entered the throne hall in a rush. He took position beside the earlier knight and went down on one knee.

"Your Majesty, a report from His Highness, the First Prince, has arrived," he said, which made the king and the advisor widen their eyes.

"Tell me, what is it?" the king hurriedly said.

The knight smiled. "His Highness told us not to fall into panic. The meteorite impact did not harm them at all. Instead, the meteorite impact obliterated all the devils on the northeastern side of the kingdom. After this, we can mobilize the troops in the northeast to the northernmost region to strengthen General Adilov's troops."

King Darius and his advisor widened their eyes in astonishment.

The meteorite impact obliterated the devils in the northeast? And the First Prince and his troops were unharmed?

That was great news!

"And His Highness said that he would like to meet with Your Majesty and bring someone later, after taking care of a few matters following the meteorite impact, which could be done today. His Highness sent a message that we have to give the person he brings the best treatment. That is all for the report, Your Majesty," the knight continued.

King Darius raised his eyebrows, and his face turned curious. This was the first time he had heard from his first son that he would bring someone, and from the looks of it, this person was truly important to him.

Who was this person that made his first son say they had to give this person the best treatment? And this was in the middle of their war nonetheless.

They were in the middle of their counterattack against the devils, yet the First Prince even brought that person here personally?

"Alright, you two may return to your posts," the king said.

"Yes, Your Majesty," the two knights answered before leaving the throne hall.

After the knights left, King Darius then looked at his advisor.

"What do you think, Ceraz? Does this person have something to do with what just happened? This is the first time Martis has sent this kind of message."

Ceraz, his advisor, nodded his head. "Although it sounds absurd, in my opinion it seems so, Your Majesty. There is no other circumstance that would make His Highness leave the frontline just to bring a person to meet Your Majesty. His Highness must think this is extremely important, which is why he decided to escort that person personally."

The king pondered deeply before he spoke again.

"Is there anyone who has the ability to pull a meteor from space and direct it toward a specific target?"

The advisor shook his head. "As far as I know, there is none, Your Majesty. Even in the records, there is no one who has the ability to pull a meteor from space. That is why it sounds so absurd, unless that person used a trick with an interstellar vessel or some kind of artifact."

The king nodded in agreement. The idea that a cultivator could pull a meteor from space itself was already outside their understanding. As for creating a meteor through energy manifestation in space?

That might be possible if the cultivator were in space. But it would deplete the entire energy inside their dantian depending on the size of the meteor, and the meteor would likely miss the target.

If the meteor just now obliterated the devils' camp in the northeast but not the First Prince's troops, that meant the meteor fell on a specific target.

The First Prince's troops must have already prepared themselves for the impact so that they would not be swept away by it. That meant they knew the meteorite would fall.

The fact that the First Prince did not report any casualties was proof of that.

That was why both the king and the advisor thought that the one who cast such a technique must have been on the ground to guide the meteorite precisely.

This made them curious to meet this person.

What kind of person could do something like this?

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1045 - 1045: The Distance to Reach Central Region of Heaven

[1,655 words]

The capital city of the Gardum Kingdom, Hervian City, is located on the eastern side of the kingdom. Its position lies on flat grassland that spans until the horizon. The land is also fertile, which is why the land surrounding the city is utilized for farms, rice fields, and various plantations.

The distance between the capital city and the nearest war frontline, which is the northeast frontline, is still quite far. However, as the devils slowly advance their troops, the frontline is also gradually pushed in the direction of the city.

Many know that if this continues, it will only be a matter of time before the capital city is engulfed in the war as well.

This is something that greatly worries many nobles who live in the capital, as well as the king himself, because once the capital falls, the morale of all troops and citizens will drop.

Now that news has arrived that the devils' troops positioned at their nearest frontline have been completely wiped out, how could the king not be happy about it?

With the biggest concern for the capital now gone, the people in the capital specifically, and the citizens on the eastern side of the kingdom in general, can finally breathe in relief.

At this moment, only a few people know what truly happened in the northeast of the kingdom.

However, it is only a matter of time before what happened in the northeast becomes known to the rest of the kingdom, as many eyewitnesses saw a giant meteorite fall beyond the horizon.

Aldrian appeared in front of the warp gate inside the capital city of Hervian with Prince Martis. A carriage under the protection of the line knights was already waiting not far from the warp gate, and they entered it.

The people who saw Prince Martis were truly astonished, for the prince who was known to be at the frontline had suddenly returned, and he was accompanied by an unknown person. It became the talk of many people, and they gave way to the royal carriage when the convoy started moving.

It did not take long to reach the royal palace located at the center of the city, a conspicuous grand castle with some of its buildings reaching the clouds. Aldrian got out of the carriage in front of the main gate of the castle.

"Let's go, Your Excellency. His Majesty the King is already waiting for our arrival," Prince Martis said to Aldrian.

Under the escort of Prince Martis, they reached the throne hall, where Aldrian finally saw the king himself. King Darius and his advisor were inside the throne hall, and the moment they saw an unknown man beside the first prince, they instinctively tried to observe him.

The handsome young man was at middle pseudo immortal establishment stage, and there was some strange feeling as if they were standing before someone of higher status. It was as if their souls prompted them to revere this man, as though that was how it was supposed to be naturally.

"Your Majesty," Prince Martis greeted with a slight bow.

King Darius nodded with a smile. "Son, I already heard your report. And he is...?"

"He is the one I want you to meet, Father. Let me introduce him. He is His Excellency, Sir Aldrian, from the Ancient Blue Gate World of the Central Star Cluster, the one known as Aldrian the Great."

Hearing his identity, the king and the advisor widened their eyes in shock. King Darius instantly stood up.

"What?" he could not help but blurt out.

"Yes, Father. He is the real Aldrian the Great, and because of certain circumstances, he arrived in our world. You might have already guessed this, but he is the one who helped us wipe out the devils on the northeastern side of the kingdom," Prince Martis confirmed once again, which made the king quickly walk toward Aldrian, who was still silent.

"To think that we have received such a great figure here. Welcome, Your Excellency. It is truly nice that I could finally meet you. It seems fate has truly arranged for us to meet in this time full of uncertainty," King Darius said as he offered a handshake, which Aldrian accepted with a smile.

"What great figure? I am just a normal cultivator here," Aldrian answered.

"Your Excellency is truly jesting. How could we act as if you were just a normal cultivator when your great name has reached here from such a faraway place because of your achievements? No matter where Your Excellency goes, you are supposed to receive the best respect and treatment," the king replied. He then gave a signal to follow him and walked outside the hall.

"Let us talk in a more comfortable place, Your Excellency," he added before escorting Aldrian outside the hall toward the deeper part of the palace. They then walked past a

garden before entering a dome-shaped glass house filled with various flowers growing inside.

Inside the glass house, the atmosphere was truly refreshing, and the illuminating sunlight did not feel hot. It was warm, giving a sense of peacefulness.

In the middle of the glass house, a pavilion with a table and a few chairs could be seen, and King Darius brought Aldrian there.

King Darius, Aldrian, and Prince Martis sat down while Advisor Ceraz stood behind the king. The maids quickly served tea for them before excusing themselves.

"Your Excellency, please enjoy it," King Darius said.

"Thank you, Your Majesty," Aldrian replied before he picked up the cup and sipped the tea. The king and Prince Martis did the same.

After they sipped their tea, the king looked at Aldrian with a smile.

"Your Excellency, I heard about someone who helped General Zordan achieve a great victory and capture those devil spies. I also heard about the meteorite that fell, which must have been caused by someone. Were those all Your Excellency's doing?"

Aldrian nodded. "Yes. I just wanted to give some help to the people of this world who are fighting against the devils."

Hearing that, the king sighed.

"Your Excellency, to tell you the truth, when we first heard about you and your achievements, I was actually quite skeptical. However, there was still a part of me that believed it might be true," King Darius said.

"There is no way that news spreading this far, to a place one year away by warp from the Central Star Cluster, could be entirely nonsense. There must be something that made it worthy of being spread so widely." He then smiled.

"Now, after hearing Your Excellency's capabilities, I am truly ashamed that I ever doubted you. Now everything makes sense."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows when he heard something from the king.

"One year away from the Central Star Cluster?" Aldrian asked, which caused the king and the advisor to look confused. They saw that Aldrian seemed unaware of the distance between their world and the Central Star Cluster, even though he came from there.

"Excuse me, Your Majesty, but how far is this place from the Central Region of Heaven?" Aldrian asked, which made King Darius and Ceraz raise their eyebrows.

"The distance to the Central Region of Heaven from here is more or less eleven months to a year."

Aldrian inwardly sighed upon hearing the distance. To think that he was still a year away from the Central Region of Heaven.

He knew that because of this, he had already lost the best timing to launch a surprise attack against those devils. Even if he somehow received help and departed now, those devils might have already prepared something.

He doubted that those gods would simply remain still after he killed the Vampire King and his large army.

He guessed that those gods were trying to send more cultivators from the higher heavens to take care of the problem in the First Heaven, because that was the only thing they could do for now. That was also the fastest way.

The longer it took him to reach the Central Region of Heaven, the more cultivators from the higher heavens would gather there.

Still, he felt glad that at least he now knew where he was, so he could plan what he needed to do next.

"Your Excellency, if I may ask, why are you inquiring about the distance to the Central Region of Heaven? That place is a dangerous region filled with strong devils, with the Vampire King as their leader. That vampire king is said to be so powerful that he could conquer an entire world by himself," King Darius said.

"Actually, I was in the middle of my journey to the Central Region of Heaven before a misfortune befell me, which caused me to be thrown into this world. I planned to attack the Central Region of Heaven and end the devils' occupation there once and for all," Aldrian replied without hesitation.

King Darius and his advisor were truly shocked.

To end the devils' occupation there?

What a bold statement!

Aldrian then told them why he needed to go there, which eventually touched on the topic of the Vampire King. After he finished narrating his story, disbelief appeared on the faces of the king and his advisor.

Aldrian did not find it surprising, as Prince Martis himself had also not believed it at first. There was no other way but to let the king and his advisor experience the same thing as the prince.

Aldrian made the king and his advisor fall into an illusion that showed how he faced the Vampire King and his large army.

King Darius and Ceraz were truly blown away by what they saw, and it caused their souls to tremble.

The moment the illusion ended, their faces froze with tense expressions. Sweat rolled down their faces as they had just witnessed something incomprehensible to them.

After a few moments of silence, King Darius released a heavy breath.

"Goddess... to think that something like that happened without anyone knowing," he said.

"I see, so that is the case. No wonder those devils changed their strategy in the war. Now everything makes sense," the advisor commented.

Aldrian picked up the cup and looked at them. "Do you still have any doubt?"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1046 - 1046: Helping Each Other

[1,606 words]

King Darius and his advisor released a sigh almost at the same time.

"No, Your Excellency, I believe you, because now it all makes sense. Just like my advisor here said, now it all makes sense why the devils in this world seemed to change their strategy in this war," King Darius said.

"With the Vampire King going to the central star cluster with his huge army, he must have also called many of the devils that were spread across many places, including this world. We detected some huge movements of the devils departing from this world toward an unknown location more than a year ago."

"If we match it with Your Excellency's story, then it fits that those devils were departing to the central star cluster. Now, with the death of the Vampire King and his army, the devils here or anywhere under his rule will lack support, which makes them move carefully in the war. They cannot just recklessly advance like in the past."

King Darius smiled. "Indirectly, Your Excellency has helped our world again. Now that we know the Vampire King is dead, we can fight more confidently."

Aldrian also smiled before he sipped his tea. "I'm glad that I could be of great help."

"Your Excellency, why did you become entangled with someone like the Vampire King? You are so far away in the central star cluster, and for him to bring his large army there, there must have been something that made him decide to visit the central star cluster personally," King Darius asked.

"I killed his favorite son, as he also tried to invade the Ancient Blue Gate World," Aldrian replied, causing the three listeners to be astonished.

The king sighed. "Amazing. I think Your Excellency is the only one I could see talking about killing someone of the calibre of the Vampire King and his family as if it were something easy to do. But after seeing what Your Excellency can do, I suppose that Your Excellency is the only one worthy to say such a thing."

Putting aside how Aldrian could make a meteor fall, how in the world could he create black holes, not only one or two, but many? And then merge them into a single massive black hole, which could then be exploded?

Could a mortal human really do that?

If Aldrian said that he was an immortal or a god, he might believe it. The king smiled at the thought.

"Actually, together with the other powers of this world, we had already arranged a plan in the past. A desperate plan, you may call it, to send someone to the Ancient Blue Gate World to ask for help with the current war if the situation did not change," he said.

"Although many of us thought the news about Your Excellency might be too exaggerated or even nonsense, there were others who hoped, like me, that this news was true and that Your Excellency could help us. We even prepared something so we could formally request Your Excellency's help."

"But to think that the heavens brought Your Excellency here, I believe our world is truly blessed."

The king paused and sipped his tea before looking at Aldrian solemnly.

"Your Excellency, you said that you will end the devils' occupation of the central region of heaven. Are you going to do it alone? How are you going to continue your journey? As far as I know, Your Excellency is using an unknown means of transportation to reach this place in such a short time."

Aldrian nodded. "Yes, I am planning to do it alone. I do not want to drag anyone into something this dangerous. This is also my personal decision to attack the devils in the central region of heaven, so I do not think it would be good to bring anyone on this dangerous journey."

"As for my transport, well, I am using a method that might sound absurd to you. I use a teleportation gate that can connect the Ancient Blue Gate World to the central region of heaven." Hearing that, the king and the others widened their eyes.

"Well, there was a disturbance in space and I was thrown into this world. That is why I am here. Now that I am already here, I am planning to look for anyone who can lend me an interstellar vessel to the central region of heaven."

King Darius and the others seemed to simply accept whatever Aldrian said at this point. Everything he did was already outside of their comprehension, and trying to understand it with their current knowledge would only make them lose their minds.

To think that there was a possible method to travel instantly between the central star cluster and the central region of heaven.

Although there had been a disturbance and Aldrian was thrown into this place, it was still a fact that he reached this world in a short time, something never heard of before. That alone was enough to revolutionize how civilizations travel between distant worlds.

King Darius set aside the matter of the teleportation gate and focused instead on the fact that Aldrian was looking for someone willing to lend an interstellar vessel.

The king's eyes brightened at the prospect that he could help Aldrian.

"If Your Excellency wants it, I can lend you one interstellar vessel from our family. But I can imagine what those operators will think the moment they know Your Excellency wants to go to the central region of heaven. All of them will hesitate," King Darius said.

Aldrian smiled. "That is enough. I am truly thankful to Your Majesty for the offer of the vessel. I will compensate Your Majesty later."

King Darius waved his hand. "As long as it can help Your Excellency, I will help as best as I can. Moreover, Your Excellency has a great purpose in eliminating the devils that have occupied the central region of heaven for so long. How could I not help you with that? Instead, I am glad that I—no, that my family—might also contribute greatly to the future of the First Heaven."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. "You believe in me that much?"

King Darius was still smiling. "Well, after seeing and hearing all the things Your Excellency has done, I simply want to place my bet on Your Excellency's successful journey. I cannot even understand Your Excellency's existence itself, because so many of the things you have done overturn common knowledge, no offense, Your Excellency."

"I choose to believe that Your Excellency might succeed in leaving your name in the history of the First Heaven, a history that will always be remembered."

Aldrian nodded. "I see. Then it looks like I have to do my best so that I do not fail Your Majesty's expectations and the bet you have placed on me."

King Darius and the others chuckled.

"But before I depart, I will help this world get rid of the devils," Aldrian said, which made King Darius, his advisor, and Prince Mistar's expressions turn ecstatic.

If Aldrian helped them, then their victory was certain!

A man who could face the Vampire King and his army would treat the devils in this world as nothing more than a snack.

"Thank you, Your Excellency. If Your Excellency helps us, it will be a certain victory for us. Those devils will not know what is coming for them," King Darius said, unable to hide the excitement in his voice.

Aldrian smiled and sipped his tea before he continued.

"Also, we have to do something about the spies that have already infiltrated deep within the kingdom. And I am not talking about those lower-rank troops, but the higher ones. There is a possibility that those devils have already spread their influence among some nobles."

King Darius and the others frowned, and the prince's expression turned solemn.

"Does Your Excellency think so? We have traitors among the high-ranking nobles?" he asked.

Aldrian nodded. "Yes. In fact I have already met one of the nobles who is under the devils' influence."

Prince Martis sighed in exasperation while the other two frowned deeply.

"As I thought, there are indeed traitors among the nobles. I just could not shake the feeling that something was wrong when we gathered. There were a few times when I

could not help but think that among those who gathered with me, there might be some who had become the devils' spies," the prince said.

"So who is the one that Your Excellency found to be the devils' spy?" he asked solemnly.

"Marquess Beruin," Aldrian answered.

The prince sighed once again, and as for the king and his advisor, they looked as if they already suspected something.

"Marquess Beruin, huh? As I thought, the way he changed how he handled matters inside his territory was truly strange. That must be because he is a devil spy," King Darius commented.

"Marquess Beruin's situation is different from the other spies that were already caught," Aldrian then explained the possession method to them. He also explained that there might be more than one body under the devils' possession.

After he finished explaining, understanding dawned upon them, and they could not help but show grim expressions.

"This is troublesome. Basically, they are not yet dead, but their consciousness is trapped within their own souls," King Darius said.

"Yes, and with more than one noble possibly under possession, it will create chaos in the kingdom if the people find out about it. Those devils might also do something desperate if we discover their scheme," Advisor Ceraz commented in a grim tone.

Aldrian also pondered for a moment about how he would take care of the possession problem. The others were thinking the same.

After a few moments of thought, Aldrian finally opened his lips.

"I think I have an idea on how to deal with this possession problem, at least within this kingdom."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1047 - 1047: Getting Famous

[1,583 words]

A week later,

There was a development that became the hot topic among the citizens of the Gardum Kingdom. For the past few days, news of victory after victory in battle kept reaching their ears, giving them hope and happiness.

After the past few years of war, during which they seemed to keep losing, they finally received good news, something that gave them optimism. The devils in the Gardum Kingdom kept losing their foothold in the kingdom, leaving only a few bases on the western side of the kingdom.

However, there was another story that accompanied the news of victory. There was a figure present in many of the battles, a new figure they had never heard of before.

The name Aldrian started to spread because of his strength and capabilities. The story about the falling meteorite had already spread across the kingdom, and that was the first time the name Aldrian spread widely.

Some troops on the northeastern side, who became witnesses at that time, were undoubtedly the ones who spread it to their acquaintances. From there, the story started to develop and grow much bigger.

Aldrian was also someone who could detect any devil spies, who had already become a problem for the kingdom's troops for quite a while.

Another remarkable thing was that if he was involved in a battle, the casualties would be greatly reduced. This had already been proven in several battles, with or without him present.

The story about Aldrian became more exaggerated among the citizens, such as the claim that he might be a reclusive immortal who stayed in the mortal world. He came out of his seclusion after a long time because the situation forced him to do so.

Although most people had never seen Aldrian, the description of him had already spread. Many said he had a youthful appearance and a handsome face that would attract all beings.

Some people from various organizations, curious to see him, even traveled to the nearby frontlines in the hope that they could at least catch a glimpse of him.

The situation in the Gardum Kingdom also started to attract attention from various nearby nations. They also began to learn about Aldrian's existence.

They could also feel the earthquake when the meteorite fell after all. At that time, many were confused about the source of the earthquake, but after some time, they finally learned how the devils in the northeast of the Gardum Kingdom were wiped out.

With Aldrian's name continuing to spread, there was no way that what he did in this war could remain hidden from them. The powers of this world were connected to each other, as it was important to know each nation's development in the war.

This was important for their coordination and survival, as all of them were on the same side. With the Gardum Kingdom pushing back the devils, the nearby nations were also affected by it. They saw hope for the future.

And as for the devils? They were already anxious as they started to lose ground.

In an unknown place far from the frontline, inside a vast hall, a woman lay casually on a chaise lounge. The only thing she used to cover her voluptuous body was a piece of red cloth that covered her breasts and her crotch area.

Her long red hair reached her waist. She had sharp eyes that could captivate anyone, a beautiful pointed nose, and all of that created a mature and beautiful face. Anyone who saw her would find it impossible not to be attracted to her unless they were abnormal.

However, she was like a poisonous flower that could kill anyone who thought she was an easy target. Her peak pseudo immortal stage cultivation was not for show, and it only proved her great talent as a cultivator.

The devil aura exuding from her also made those who desired her think twice about whether they truly wanted to approach her.

Normally, she showed an indifferent expression all day, as if she were bored of being here. However, for the past few days, she had frowned much more because of the events happening in the Gardum Kingdom.

Like at this moment, when a woman wearing scanty attire that only covered the intimate parts of her body knelt not far from her and gave a report.

"At this moment, the Gardum Kingdom could be said to be entirely lost, my lady. There is nothing we can do to flip the situation in the Gardum Kingdom, as we lack the troops to support our position there."

"Our spies also cannot do much, as they are always caught by that person named Aldrian. As for the puppets, we also cannot act recklessly, as that would raise the suspicion of the royal family, who already seem to be realizing the existence of traitors among the nobles."

"That is the latest development in the Gardum Kingdom."

The kneeling woman then stopped.

The red-haired woman frowned deeply as she thought about how she would deal with this problem. The direction of the war over the past few days had started to shift against them, which was bad.

With the Gardum Kingdom successfully wiping out their troops there, it raised the enemy's morale, making the war even more difficult. Worse, some nations seemed to realize that they were lacking troops, as reinforcements from the central region of Heaven and other regions had stopped entirely.

If this continued, it would only be a matter of time before they lost and were forced to leave this world.

'Aldrian, Aldrian... he is the one who has dealt us the most devastating damage. Where the hell did he come from? He appeared out of nowhere and ruined our plan,' the red-haired woman thought.

'The fact that he could catch our spies without fail is already incredible, making him our priority target. Luckily, he does not seem to know about the puppets. Still, for him to have that kind of capability and power... is he someone at the level of His Majesty?'

The moment she reached this conclusion, she shook her head.

'No, there is no way he could be at the level of His Majesty. His Majesty is already on a different level compared to anyone in the First Heaven. But this guy is the real deal and much stronger than a normal peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivator.'

She bit her lips.

'Why is there still no news from His Majesty? He should have already arrived at the central star cluster and taken care of the problem there. We should have also received an estimation of how long we will have to wait for the reinforcements.'

The woman then changed her position and sat elegantly.

'Forget it. If there is still no news from His Majesty, then so be it. There is nothing that could stop him anyway.'

Her mind then returned to Aldrian once again.

'It looks like we have to focus on that man first if we want to get rid of the threat in this world and flip the situation... even if we have to use crude plan.'

After thinking for a few moments, she finally opened her lips.

"Send a group of Dark Lily to Aldrian. Send the best of them. Whatever happens, we must kill that man. Let's see if he can withstand the desire inside him. As a man, his weakness should not be different from others."

"Yes, my lady," the kneeling woman replied before she left the hall.

The red-haired woman then lay down again and closed her eyes.

'I hope he has the same weakness as those other men. If not...'

If Aldrian heard what this woman was thinking, he would likely strangle her to death and even torture her.

'Well, maybe I should finally step in myself. I feel bored since I have not found anyone worthy of me here. I could finally entertain myself. It has been so long since I enjoyed such pleasure. I wonder if that Aldrian could satisfy me like His Majesty?'

'Ah... I can't wait.'

In the Gardum Kingdom, on the western frontline, a battle broke out at this moment. The kingdom's troops were attacking the last devil camp occupying the western front. This was also the last devil base inside the Gardum Kingdom.

The moment this base was destroyed, it would signal that the Gardum Kingdom had retaken its entire territory from the devils.

The battle itself was more like a one-sided slaughter, with the kingdom's troops, supported by Aldrian, killing the devils with ease.

Aldrian floated in the sky, killing the devils with his sword strikes as if he were cutting weeds. Each of his normal swings took the lives of several devils.

"This is not over, bastard! You will regret going against us! You will regret it!" one of the devils shouted in desperation before being stabbed by one of the kingdom's troops.

"Our god will come for you! His Majesty will torture you to death!" shouted another devil before his body was cut apart by Aldrian's strike.

The devils could do nothing against enemies who were far greater in number and stronger in quality. Moreover, Aldrian was there.

The devils were slaughtered to the last one. They could not even commit suicide, as Aldrian cut down every one of them who tried to do so.

Blood flowed across the battlefield, and bodies were scattered everywhere. The moment the last devil fell, the troops instantly stopped their movements.

Prince Martis, who was leading this attack, could not hide his smile when he saw the last devil fall. After making sure all the fighting had ended, he raised his sword.

"We win!"

"UWOOOO!" Thousands of troops also raised their weapons and roared in triumph.

After years of war, they had finally liberated their kingdom from the devils' occupation!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1048 - 1048: The Change He Left Behind

[1,689 words]

Two days later,

After the end of the war with the devils in the Gardum Kingdom, the citizens of the kingdom could finally breathe a sigh of relief. The threat of the devils' occupation was no more, and the citizens could carry out their activities normally again.

The war caused great destruction in many places in the territories the devils had already occupied. Cities were destroyed, and some noble families even fell. But with the war against them in the kingdom finished, they could start to rebuild those places.

Although there might still be devils hiding somewhere who could create disturbances just like in the past, they were no longer active. Since Aldrian's name spread and the war turned against the devils, the infiltrators seemed to go into hiding and stopped doing anything.

Aldrian's name also became more famous with the end of the war. At this point, his name had become a topic of discussion everywhere, even in the smallest villages, and many people knew his appearance.

In Arsun Village, a joyous atmosphere could be felt across the entire village. All the villagers already considered Aldrian their greatest benefactor, and some of them even regarded him as a god.

Since Aldrian left the village, their lives had become much better. With all the things that Aldrian had left for them, the village had become a place full of cultivators. However, the improvement was not only in the villagers' strength but also in their quality of life.

Besides using the energy stones given by Aldrian for cultivation, they also used them to improve their lives by doing some things that were normal for others but were once luxuries for them.

Normal things such as having good meals every day without worrying about what they would eat tomorrow, buying many clothes including special clothes for winter because they used to feel as if they would freeze to death during that season, renovating their homes so they could live more comfortably, and other improvements.

That was why the village looked busier than ever since Aldrian left, with activity seen everywhere. Even the elderly, who looked as if they might drop dead at any moment, were doing their activities such as carrying wood or chopping it.

There were also some villagers openly cultivating without worry. Others renovated their houses, with construction taking place here and there. Some developed their farms and fields on a much larger scale.

The sight truly contrasted with how the village had been when Aldrian stayed there.

The moment they heard that Aldrian was said to have contributed greatly to the war, of course they felt happy.

They knew that the Aldrian who had become the hot topic was the same Aldrian who had visited their village.

There was no way it was a coincidence that another Aldrian appeared and could turn the tide of the war not long after the Aldrian they knew left the village, right?

They felt lucky that he had stayed in their simple village for a few days and that they had received his direct teaching and even cultivation techniques. With countless people talking about him, the villagers knew that they were truly blessed to be a place the hero had once visited.

"Young master is truly great. To think that he is so strong that even the people in the town talk about him non-stop. No wonder young master dared to face the Beruin family," one of the villagers commented while taking care of his farm.

"Yes, and for him to be that strong yet remain humble. At that time, I did not think young master was that powerful. To think that his presence alone could turn the tide of the war," another villager said.

"I wonder where young master came from? If young master had appeared earlier, I believe those devils would not have made our situation so difficult."

As the villagers discussed Aldrian, Village Head Rokan, who was taking a stroll through the village, happened to overhear them and smiled.

In recent days, he had spent most of his time in the village, staying with his family and cultivating diligently. He had already stopped picking Crimson Flame Mushrooms and decided to focus on strengthening himself for now.

Moreover, with the wealth he had, he could do something else, such as opening a new business that would not require him to travel repeatedly to the mountain or the town like in the past.

Having decided to strengthen himself, he was determined to spend most of his time training and cultivating.

Village Head Rokan's gaze then caught sight of Valuk, who seemed to be taking care of the herbs he had planted in the small garden of his house. Valuk's house was also under renovation, with outside workers invited to do the job.

Ella could be seen beside him, watching how her grandpa worked.

Village Head Rokan approached them, and the moment Valuk saw him, he smiled.

"Village head, taking a stroll?" he asked.

"Yes. I see that you also decided to renovate your house," the village head said as he looked at the house that was still under construction.

"Yes. Even if I do not think much about myself, I have to think about what is best for Ella. I want to give her a comfortable life," Valuk replied as he gently stroked Ella's head beside him.

The village head nodded with a smile, but then he sighed. "Our village's situation is truly different compared to the past." He looked around at the many activities taking place throughout the village. He could see many happy faces full of optimism, unlike the atmosphere of struggle in the past.

"I never imagined that I would see the transformation of our simple village into this," he added.

Valuk also looked at the village and nodded with a smile.

"It is thanks to young master Aldrian," he said.

The village head looked at Valuk with a smile. "You also took a big part in this, Sir Valuk. If you had not helped young master Aldrian, we would still be living in misery, and the entire kingdom would not have a hero. I and the entire village... no, the entire kingdom owe you for deciding to help young master at that time."

"If I were in your shoes at that time, I would undoubtedly hesitate because I would not want to attract trouble to the village. Your decision to help young master back then truly had a great effect on many lives."

Valuk did not say anything. Sometimes he still felt disbelief when he thought about the first time he met Aldrian. His decision to help someone unknown to him, simply because of his principles, had ended up changing many people's fate.

If he had decided not to help Aldrian because he was worried about the trouble that might follow, the story of himself, this village, and the entire kingdom would have been very different.

"Ella wants to be like big brother Aldrian. I want to be strong like big brother," Ella suddenly said, which made both men look at her with smiles.

"Then you must train hard in the future so you can be like him, Ella," the village head said.

Ella nodded repeatedly. "Ella will train hard in the future."

Valuk smiled as he watched his granddaughter, who had finally found something she wanted to pursue. He stroked her head again and looked at the sky.

He wondered what Aldrian was doing at this moment.

In the capital city, there was a beautiful mansion located not far from the royal palace. It was surrounded by a beautiful garden.

At this moment, Aldrian was sitting cross-legged in one part of the garden with his eyes closed. His unblemished face was serene, and his breathing was steady.

As he continued meditating, not far from him, a young woman approached from the other side of the garden. The woman had long blonde hair that reached her back, and her beauty was no less than Angelica's.

She was wearing an elegant dress that enhanced her charm, and with the smile she wore at this moment, there was no man who could escape her allure.

She did not disturb Aldrian and simply watched him from a distance. Her face was slightly flushed as she kept observing his features.

Aldrian finally opened his eyes a few seconds after the woman arrived. He turned his head and showed a small smile toward the beauty in front of him.

"Your Highness," he greeted. "To think that you would visit me today. My apologies for not greeting you earlier."

"Ah, it is alright, Your Excellency. Father has asked me to inform you about the development of the banquet the day after tomorrow. All of the nobles will come, just as planned," the woman replied.

She was the last child of King Darius and his only daughter, Xena Veradin Gardum.

Aldrian nodded upon hearing the princess.

"I see. Thank you for the information, Your Highness." Aldrian then stood up, and before he could say more, Princess Xena continued.

"Your Excellency, if you do not mind, could you look at my sword technique again? After the last time you pointed out what I was lacking, I have tried to improve it." Her face was blushing as she said this. It could be seen that she was pushing herself to say those words.

Aldrian raised his eyebrows and smiled before nodding.

"Of course, Your Highness. Let's see your improvement."

Princess Xena's expression turned ecstatic, and she quickly opened her dress, which stunned Aldrian. Under her elegant dress was actually another training attire that accentuated her curves. She then took out her sword from her storage ring.

Aldrian smiled at the princess's behavior. She had clearly prepared in advance and did not care about her image. However, he did not look surprised, as he already knew about her character.

She then took a position not far from Aldrian and made a stance, her expression turning focused.

A moment later, she finally began to move.

While Aldrian was observing the princess, not far from the mansion, two robed figures were looking in the direction of the estate.

"Is he staying in that place?" one of the robed figures asked. The voice belonged to a woman.

"Yes. The information from the puppets is all the same. He is staying in that place," the other robed figure answered, also with a woman's voice.

"Alright. Let's inform Lady Selis. We will do it tonight."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1049 - 1049: Died in Pleasure (R-18)

[1,650 words]

The mansion that Aldrian is currently staying in was provided by the royal family to be his place of residence as long as he remains in this world. It already includes all of the mansion's staff.

King Darius truly gave him the best treatment.

Princess Xena stayed in the mansion for more than an hour as she kept training while Aldrian gave her pointers. The princess also looked serious during the training, and her bashfulness was not apparent like earlier throughout the session.

She looked focused and listened to each of Aldrian's words as if he were her master.

Aldrian also comfortably guided her as if they had known each other for a long time. Besides courtesy, this was also to build a closer connection with the royal family.

He could sense that the princess wanted to learn and train earnestly, which he appreciated and was glad to help her with in her training.

The first time he saw the princess, when the war with the devils was still raging, he knew that she was the type of strong and independent woman. She led her small knight order, which consisted of only women, during the war and made a name for herself.

Although she was not as strong as her brother, Prince Martis, her achievements were worthy of acknowledgment. In some war events against the devils in the past, if not for her and her knight order, there would have been more civilian casualties.

She liked to train with her sword, and her determination to grow stronger was clear. She hated being weak and unable to prevent the deaths of many people as they were always being pushed back by the devils.

That was also why she came to him herself in the past when they were in the same base camp and asked for his opinion regarding her sword technique.

She said that she was mesmerized by his sword technique and the power he showed when he killed the devils. This made her think of him as a great swordmaster whose opinion was worthy of being listened to regarding the sword.

Since then, she had come to him many times to discuss swordsmanship.

After the training was done, the princess wore her elegant dress again and smiled at him with a flushed face.

"Thank you for the guidance, Your Excellency," she said with a slight bow.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. "No problem, Your Highness. Just keep perfecting the movement that I just pointed out, and you can cover the weakness in your technique."

The princess nodded, but then her face grew redder, though she tried to hold it in. "Your Excellency, it feels not good for you to keep calling me 'Your Highness.' Didn't I say that you could just call me by my name? I just feel that I am not worthy to receive an honorific from a man of your status," she said.

Aldrian still smiled. "My apologies. I am already used to it... Xena."

Princess Xena's expression turned joyful.

"Alright, then I will return to the palace, Your Excellency. My apologies for taking your time."

Aldrian nodded, and finally the princess left the mansion in her carriage. Aldrian, seeing the carriage getting farther away, sighed.

At this point, every woman he met would end up being attracted to him. Although Princess Xena considered him a mentor and a respected figure, he could sense that she was slowly becoming attracted to him.

The fact that King Darius sent his daughter to him just to deliver a mere message also made it clear that the king had his own plan regarding his daughter. What could that be if not matchmaking?

The king might have already noticed his daughter's attraction to him and decided to take advantage of it.

Aldrian did not find it offensive, but it just felt classic, trying to entice him using beauties. He knew that this kind of move was common, and he had already experienced it many times.

He shook his head and entered the mansion again. He wanted to continue cultivating his comprehension and train using his domain.

In an unknown place, inside a bedroom, a naked man and woman indulged themselves in pleasure, with the woman on top of the man. The woman was truly beautiful, with her long purple hair, and her aura at middle pseudo immortal stage was clearly shown.

The man beneath her was a middle-aged man and had a cultivation at peak pseudo immortal stage.

"Ah, yes... yes... this is it, this is it," a sexy voice resounded.

The woman moved her hips up and down repeatedly, her face showing extreme pleasure, while the man also showed an expression full of ecstasy.

However, as time passed, the man's body started to pale, and his aura at the peak pseudo-immortal stage began to become unstable. It was as if his cultivation had started to collapse.

Not long after, his body began to wither as if something had sucked him dry from the inside. Soon, the man's cultivation disappeared, and he stopped breathing.

He was obviously dead. Despite still showing a pleasurable expression, his body's condition was truly horrible, like a dried twig.

The woman's expression became even more filled with ecstasy, as if she was savoring the extreme pleasure she felt at that moment. Suddenly, a thin tail could be seen appearing from her tailbone.

"Ah, yes, finally. I can feel that I am about to make a breakthrough to peak pseudo immortal stage," the woman said in a satisfied tone.

"Just a little more, and I can break through." She smiled for a moment before looking at the dead man who was still showing a pleasurable expression.

She then stood up, causing the man's dick slip out of her slit.

After that, she covered her naked body with an attire formed from energy, an attire that seemed almost useless as it only covered her most intimate parts.

She then got off the bed, and a split second later, behind her, a shadow manifested into a body and transformed into another beautiful woman with brown hair, wearing the same attire as hers.

"Lady Selis, we have already found the target's location, and tonight we can make our move," the woman said.

The one called Selis nodded with a smile.

"I see. Then let's move. Ahh, I cannot wait to taste that man. I can finally break through after this. I wonder what kind of face he will make when I drain him dry," she said in a tone full of confidence and arousal.

Both of their figures then disappeared.

Later, news that caused an uproar spread throughout one part of the world. One of its prominent figures, the leader of one of the strongest sects, had died in a horrible condition.

Night came to the capital city of the Gardum Kingdom, with a unique blue moon decorating the night sky.

The city was still bustling with activities, but not in the area of the mansion where Aldrian was staying. Because this was an elite area and people did not know that Aldrian was staying here, the situation was relatively more peaceful and calm compared to other parts of the city.

Aldrian was still cultivating in the same place in the garden. His mind was focused on comprehending not only many laws but also his domain itself. His domain had mysteries that he still needed to uncover, and to understand it, he also needed to comprehend his own power.

He could not just consider his domain as only a tool or an ability. He needed to consider it as part of his own body. He needed to understand himself.

As he was still cultivating, he suddenly caught the movement of several figures entering the mansion's grounds. There were five of them, and they were not exuding any aura or cultivation.

Aldrian checked these figures using his domain sense and system.

He slowly opened his eyes the moment he learned the identity of these infiltrators.

'Succubus?' he thought. They were devils, and they were from the succubus race.

Succubi were beings that specialized in dual cultivation. Despite being a race composed entirely of women, they were one of the races that many people were wary of. They could entice any man, no matter how powerful, into their embrace.

A succubus could bring either benefit or death to her partner. If a succubus wished, she would use a dual cultivation technique that could grant benefits to the man she had intercourse with. Both of them would gain from it.

However, they could also use a technique that would harm their partner and even cause death as they drained their partner's life force and cultivation. This was a faster way to strengthen or raise the succubus's cultivation.

It was the first time he had seen succubi in this life, but in his past life, he had already seen some of them, and that included the first ancestor of the succubi.

He did not want to instantly judge that the succubus race of this universe had betrayed him, because the succubus race was not exclusive to this universe, just like many other races. Other universes also had their own succubus race.

Seeing that these devils from the succubus race were infiltrating this place, he knew that the devils of this world were making their move against him.

Aldrian smiled, but he remained seated.

Their shadows had already spread across the mansion, and when some of them encountered a maid or other mansion's staff, they used hypnotic to make the staff reveal Aldrian's location.

These succubi did not kill them. Instead, they moved toward the place where Aldrian was.

The moment they saw him, they stopped at a distance so as not to alert him. However, they were truly stunned by what they could only describe as the highest quality man in terms of appearance.

Aldrian's handsome face truly mesmerized them.

One of the shadows took shape into a woman, and that woman was Selis. Her expression turned sensual as she licked her lips.

'What an incredible man. I can feel it. He is different from those men,' she thought. Just looking at Aldrian's face was enough to make her wet.

'Ah... I cannot wait to taste him.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

Chapter 1050 - 1050: Temptation From All Side

[1,557 words]

Selis then looked at the other succubi who had already taken the shape of their human forms. She could see from their expressions that they also desired Aldrian for themselves.

'Stay on your positions. He is mine,' she sent a voice transmission to them, which stunned them.

'My lady, he is too dangerous, and we don't know what kind of tricks this man has. I think we should attack him with a combined attack. This is an important mission that will decide our war in this world,' one of the succubi said.

'That's why I told you to stand by and act as my support if things go south. I will try to use normal means on him first, and then I will give a signal and you can use the combined formation,' Selis said.

Selis could not help but snort inwardly. She knew that they also wanted Aldrian. But she intended not to give it to them.

Although she had already heard how powerful Aldrian was, her experience of never failing to entice any man even once boosted her confidence. She believed that she could take down Aldrian on her own.

She had only said those words to ease their minds. Even if they thought that she said that only because she wanted Aldrian for herself alone, she did not care.

The others felt bitterness in their hearts as they thought that Selis just wanted to take Aldrian for herself. They felt displeasure, but they could only swallow their bitterness.

As the strongest succubus here, they could only obey her.

Selis then stepped out from her hiding position and walked leisurely toward Aldrian. She did not make any effort to mask her presence and simply walked toward him.

Her aura was truly sensual.

The way she walked, the way she looked at him, the way her body moved, all of it invited the opposite sex to play with her.

Aldrian opened his eyes and looked in her direction, but she did not seem to care and kept walking toward him. She was still wearing attire that almost made her look naked, which gave her a naughty appearance.

At this moment, her figure exuded extreme charm and powerful illusion laws that would make even those at peak pseudo immortal stage struggle to defend against it.

Aldrian felt that the surrounding scenery disappeared, and in his gaze only Selis remained. His heartbeat grew faster, and even his body reacted as if he could not wait to pounce on Selis and ravage her.

Selis thought that she had already captured Aldrian, as his gaze remained fixed on her body and she could sense his body reacting to her. He was trapped in her charm and illusion, and the only thing she needed to do was drain him dry.

'What an easy task. I thought he would be more difficult to control based on how many people spoke about how powerful he is, but it looks like that was just exaggerated news. This is one of the easiest missions in my life,' she thought.

'Aish, he is too handsome to be just killed. Why don't I turn him into my slave instead? I think my lady will understand me. Wait, or maybe she will take him for herself.'

She finally reached right in front of Aldrian and, with an alluring movement, tried to touch his face.

'Whatever, you will be mine tonight—'

"So this is how those men felt when they were in front of a succubus," Aldrian suddenly said, which stunned Selis and the others.

Suddenly, Selis felt that she could not move her body at all.

In that instant, she finally realized that she had fallen into a trap!

'Use the formation!' she gave the order through sound transmission without hesitation, and the other four suddenly appeared in four directions surrounding Aldrian.

A split second later, Aldrian felt that his surroundings changed into a pink mist that made his body turn hot.

'Another illusion, huh?' he thought, but he could sense that this was much different from what he had felt just now.

His erogenous areas became more sensitive, and he felt far more aroused at this moment compared to earlier, when he had only been facing Selis.

However, that was not the only thing he could feel. He could sense that his energy was trying to leave his body, as if the entire area was attempting to drain it. Not only did he feel aroused, but he also felt his energy slowly leaving him.

The effect did not stop there, as he then saw the four almost naked succubi. They were the ones creating the formation.

The pink mist covered their intimate areas, causing anyone who saw them to imagine the shape behind the mist. Their imagination would run wild and become filled with erotic scenes within their minds.

The effect was truly strong. Aldrian could sense that if he did not have his domain power, he would have drowned in this erotic illusion. This kind of illusion could even affect a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator easily.

"Young master, you can release your desire here. Just enjoy the ultimate pleasure. Release all of your pent-up desire, and we will serve you."

"Young master, let's play with us. We will serve you, and you will feel the ultimate bliss."

"Young master—"

All four of them spoke sensual words that affected his mind, and it made his body grow hotter and more aroused.

It did not stop there, as Selis also appeared with her almost naked body and a face that showed she truly could not wait to taste him.

"Now, I will make you feel a pleasure that you have never felt before. You will forget about everything and only focus on me and my body, forever," Selis said as she walked closer.

The five succubi kept getting closer, and as they drew nearer, Aldrian felt his arousal growing stronger and his energy seeping out of his body faster.

The five succubi thought that they had finally gotten him when they saw that he did not say anything. But then they were stunned when he suddenly nodded.

"I see. So that's how it is. I understand now. I have to say that this is truly a terrifying formation. With this kind of trap, there is no doubt that it could easily trap even the strongest cultivator at peak pseudo immortal stage."

Hearing his calm voice, the five succubi widened their eyes. Aldrian's expression was still calm, as if he did not feel anything, and his body's reaction slowly returned to normal. They could no longer sense any sign of arousal from him, and instead, his body had completely returned to normal.

"What? How could you—" Before Selis could finish her words, she suddenly felt pain inside her body and vomited blood.

The other succubi felt the same, and suddenly they also vomited blood. Their expressions showed extreme pain, and they instantly collapsed to the ground, writhing.

They felt pain across their bodies, as if something were shredding their internal organs.

Aldrian's surroundings then returned to normal as the pink mist disappeared, and he found himself back in the garden.

The illusion had been broken, and now he observed the five succubi writhing in pain.

They could no longer hide their succubus features, as their tails and uniquely curved horns appeared.

"The formation that sucks the victim's energy without you even having to engage in intercourse with them. The only thing you need from your victims is their lust. The more the victims drown in their lust and feel aroused, the more you can drain their energy and even steal their cultivation," Aldrian said as he looked at the writhing succubi.

They could only grunt, as the pain they felt at this moment was truly extreme. Aldrian then smiled before continuing.

"However, you see, my pure energy is quite special, as it is not like other types of energy. You cannot absorb it, and instead it can harm you. The moment you tried to absorb my energy, there was a repulsive reaction from your body."

"And not only that, the moment you tried to take my energy into your body, I could control it and turn it into poison. What you are experiencing now is the effect of the energy that I have already changed into poison."

The succubi could not reply at all, as they were still feeling extreme pain, and only grunting sounds could be heard from their lips.

After a few moments that felt like forever for the five succubi, the pain finally subsided. Aldrian changed his energy inside the five succubi back to normal.

However, the aftereffects did not make them instantly free from pain. Instead, they still felt pain in their dantians.

Just as Aldrian had said, the moment they tried to absorb his pure golden energy, their bodies gave a repulsive reaction, and in this case their dantians were severely damaged. They cracked, and energy started seeping out from them.

As the five succubi could finally at least breathe in relief, one of them looked at Aldrian with gritted teeth.

"How could you... not be affected by the Five Heavenly Pleasure Formation? Are you not straight?"

Slash!

Suddenly, a slash energy passed across her neck, instantly killing her through decapitation. Seeing that their companion had died, the other succubi's hearts were shaken.

She was killed with only a sweep of his hand!

They then saw Aldrian's calm expression, but they could not help sensing that he was unamused at this moment.

He then looked at the others.

"Well, I'm sorry for my sudden reaction. Now let's see what you have for me," he said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.